

**AUTOMATED ESTIMATION OF  
VECTOR ERROR CORRECTION MODELS**

**By**

**Zhipeng Liao and Peter C.B. Phillips**

**September 2012**

**COWLES FOUNDATION DISCUSSION PAPER NO. 1873**



**COWLES FOUNDATION FOR RESEARCH IN ECONOMICS  
YALE UNIVERSITY  
Box 208281  
New Haven, Connecticut 06520-8281**

**<http://cowles.econ.yale.edu/>**

# Automated Estimation of Vector Error Correction Models

Zhipeng Liao \*      Peter C. B. Phillips †

First Version: June, 2010; This Version: June 2012

## Abstract

Model selection and associated issues of post-model selection inference present well known challenges in empirical econometric research. These modeling issues are manifest in all applied work but they are particularly acute in multivariate time series settings such as cointegrated systems where multiple interconnected decisions can materially affect the form of the model and its interpretation. In cointegrated system modeling, empirical estimation typically proceeds in a stepwise manner that involves the determination of cointegrating rank and autoregressive lag order in a reduced rank vector autoregression followed by estimation and inference. This paper proposes an automated approach to cointegrated system modeling that uses adaptive shrinkage techniques to estimate vector error correction models with unknown cointegrating rank structure and unknown transient lag dynamic order. These methods enable simultaneous order estimation of the cointegrating rank and autoregressive order in conjunction with oracle-like efficient estimation of the cointegrating matrix and transient dynamics. As such they offer considerable advantages to the practitioner as an automated approach to the estimation of cointegrated systems. The paper develops the new methods, derives their limit theory, reports simulations and presents an empirical illustration with macroeconomic aggregates.

*Keywords:* Adaptive shrinkage; Automation; Cointegrating rank, Lasso regression; Oracle efficiency; Transient dynamics; Vector error correction.

*JEL classification:* C22

---

\*Department of Economics, UC Los Angeles, 8379 Bunche Hall, Mail Stop: 147703, Los Angeles, CA 90095. Email: zhipeng.liao@econ.ucla.edu

† *Yale University, University of Auckland, University of Southampton and Singapore Management University.* Support from the NSF under Grant No SES 09-56687 is gratefully acknowledged. Email: peter.phillips@yale.edu

# 1 Introduction

Cointegrated system modeling is now one of the main workhorses in empirical time series research. Much of this empirical research makes use of vector error correction (VECM) formulations. While there is often some prior information concerning the number of cointegrating vectors, most practical work involves (at least confirmatory) pre-testing to determine the cointegrating rank of the system as well as the lag order in the autoregressive component that embodies the transient dynamics. These order selection decisions can be made by sequential likelihood ratio tests (e.g. Johansen, 1988, for rank determination) or the application of suitable information criteria (Phillips, 1996). The latter approach offers several advantages such as joint determination of the cointegrating rank and autoregressive order, consistent estimation of both order parameters (Chao and Phillips, 1999; Athanopoulos et. al., 2011), robustness to heterogeneity in the errors, and the convenience and generality of semi-parametric estimation in cases where the focus is simply the cointegrating rank (Cheng and Phillips, 2010, 2012). While appealing for practitioners, all of these methods are nonetheless subject to pre-test bias and post model selection inferential problems (Leeb and Pötscher, 2005).

The present paper explores a different approach. The goal is to liberate the empirical researcher from sequential testing procedures in inference about cointegrated systems and in policy work that relies on impulse responses. The ideas originate in recent work on sparse system estimation using shrinkage techniques such as lasso and bridge regression. These procedures utilize penalized least squares criteria in regression that can succeed, at least asymptotically, in selecting the correct regressors in a linear regression framework while consistently estimating the non-zero regression coefficients. While apparently effective asymptotically these procedures do not avoid post model selection inference issues in finite samples because the estimators implicitly carry effects from the implementation of shrinkage which can result in bias, multimodal distributions and difficulty discriminating local alternatives that can lead to unbounded risk (Leeb and Pötscher, 2008). On the other hand, the methods do radically simplify empirical research with large dimensional systems where order parameters must be chosen and sparsity is expected.

One of the contributions of this paper is to show how to develop adaptive versions of these shrinkage methods that apply in vector error correction modeling which by their nature involve reduced rank coefficient matrices and order parameters for lag polynomials and trend specifications. The implementation of these methods is not immediate. This

is partly because of the nonlinearities involved in potential reduced rank structures and partly because of the interdependence of decision making concerning the form of the transient dynamics and the cointegrating rank structure. The paper designs a mechanism of estimation and selection that works through the eigenvalues of the levels coefficient matrix and the coefficient matrices of the transient dynamic components. The methods apply in quite general vector systems with unknown cointegrating rank structure and unknown lag dynamics. They permit simultaneous order estimation of the cointegrating rank and autoregressive order in conjunction with oracle-like efficient estimation of the cointegrating matrix and transient dynamics. As such they offer considerable advantages to the practitioner: in effect, it becomes unnecessary to implement pre-testing procedures because the empirical results reveal the order parameters as a consequence of the fitting procedure. In this sense, the methods provide an automated approach to the estimation of cointegrated systems. In the scalar case, the methods reduce to estimation in the presence or absence of a unit root and thereby implement an implicit unit root test procedure, as suggested in earlier work by Caner and Knight (2009).

The paper is organized as follows. Section 2 lays out the model and assumptions and shows how to implement adaptive shrinkage methods in VECM systems. Section 3 considers a simplified first order version of the VECM without lagged differences which reveals the approach to cointegrating rank selection and develops key elements in the limit theory. Here we show that the cointegrating rank  $r_o$  is identified by the number of zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$  and the latter is consistently recovered by suitably designed shrinkage estimation. Section 4 extends this system and its asymptotics to the general case of cointegrated systems with weakly dependent errors. Here it is demonstrated that the cointegration rank  $r_o$  can be consistently selected despite the fact that  $\Pi_o$  itself may not be consistently estimable. Section 5 deals with the practically important case of a general VECM system driven by independent identically distributed (*iid*) shocks, where shrinkage estimation simultaneously performs consistent lag selection, cointegrating rank selection, and optimal estimation of the system coefficients. Section 6 considers adaptive selection of the tuning parameter and Section 7 reports some simulation findings. Section 8 applies our method to an empirical example. Section 9 concludes and outlines some useful extensions of the methods and limit theory to other models. Proofs and some supplementary technical results are given in the Appendix.

Notation is standard. For vector-valued, zero mean, covariance stationary stochastic processes  $\{a_t\}_{t \geq 1}$  and  $\{b_t\}_{t \geq 1}$ ,  $\Sigma_{ab}(h) = E[a_t b'_{t+h}]$  and  $\Gamma_{ab} = \sum_{h=0}^{\infty} \Sigma_{ab}(h)$  denote the lag

$h$  autocovariance matrix and one-sided long-run covariance matrix. Moreover, we use  $\Sigma_{ab}$  for  $\Sigma_{ab}(0)$  and  $\Sigma_{n,ab} = n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n a_t b_t'$  as the corresponding sample average. The notation  $\|\cdot\|$  denotes the Euclidean norm and  $|A|$  is the determinant of a square matrix  $A$ .  $A'$  refers to the transpose of any matrix  $A$  and  $\|A\|_B \equiv \|A'BA\|$  for any conformable matrices  $A$  and  $B$ .  $I_k$  and  $\mathbf{0}_l$  are used to denote  $k \times k$  identity matrix and  $l \times l$  zero matrices respectively. The symbolism  $A \equiv B$  means that  $A$  is defined as  $B$ ; the expression  $a_n = o_p(b_n)$  signifies that  $\Pr(|a_n/b_n| \geq \epsilon) \rightarrow 0$  for all  $\epsilon > 0$  as  $n$  go to infinity; and  $a_n = O_p(b_n)$  when  $\Pr(|a_n/b_n| \geq M) \rightarrow 0$  as  $n$  and  $M$  go to infinity. As usual, " $\rightarrow_p$ " and " $\rightarrow_d$ " imply convergence in probability and convergence in distribution, respectively.

## 2 Vector Error Correction and Adaptive Shrinkage

Throughout this paper we consider the following parametric VECM representation of a cointegrated system

$$\Delta Y_t = \Pi_o Y_{t-1} + \sum_{j=1}^p B_{o,j} \Delta Y_{t-j} + u_t, \quad (2.1)$$

where  $\Delta Y_t = Y_t - Y_{t-1}$ ,  $Y_t$  is an  $m$ -dimensional vector-valued time series,  $\Pi_o = \alpha_o \beta_o'$  has rank  $0 \leq r_o \leq m$ ,  $B_{o,j}$  ( $j = 1, \dots, p$ ) are  $m \times m$  (transient) coefficient matrices and  $u_t$  is an  $m$ -vector error term with mean zero and nonsingular covariance matrix  $\Sigma_{uu}$ . The rank  $r_o$  of  $\Pi_o$  is an order parameter measuring the cointegrating rank or the number of (long run) cointegrating relations in the system. The lag order  $p$  is a second order parameter, characterizing the transient dynamics in the system.

As  $\Pi_o = \alpha_o \beta_o'$  has rank  $r_o$ , we can choose  $\alpha_o$  and  $\beta_o$  to be  $m \times r_o$  matrices with full rank. When  $r_o = 0$ , we simply take  $\Pi_o = 0$ . Let  $\alpha_{o,\perp}$  and  $\beta_{o,\perp}$  be the matrix orthogonal complements of  $\alpha_o$  and  $\beta_o$  and, without loss of generality, assume that  $\alpha_{o,\perp}' \alpha_{o,\perp} = I_{m-r_o}$  and  $\beta_{o,\perp}' \beta_{o,\perp} = I_{m-r_o}$ .

Suppose  $\Pi_o \neq 0$  and define  $Q = [\beta_o, \alpha_{o,\perp}]'$ . In view of the well known relation (e.g., Johansen, 1995)

$$\alpha_o (\beta_o' \alpha_o)^{-1} \beta_o' + \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha_{o,\perp}' \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \alpha_{o,\perp}' = I_m, \quad (2.2)$$

it follows that  $Q^{-1} = \left[ \alpha_o (\beta_o' \alpha_o)^{-1}, \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha_{o,\perp}' \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \right]$ ,

$$Q \Pi_o = \begin{bmatrix} \beta_o' \alpha_o \beta_o' \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad Q \Pi_o Q^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} \beta_o' \alpha_o & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}. \quad (2.3)$$

Under Assumption RR in Section 3,  $\beta'_o \alpha_o$  is an invertible matrix and hence the matrix  $\beta'_o \alpha_o \beta'_o$  has full rank. Cointegrating rank is the number  $r_o$  of non-zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$  or the nonzero row vector count of  $Q\Pi_o$ . When  $\Pi_o = 0$ , then the result holds trivially with  $r_o = 0$  and  $\beta_{o,\perp} = I_m$ . The matrices  $\alpha_{o,\perp}$  and  $\beta_{o,\perp}$  are composed of normalized left and right eigenvectors, respectively, corresponding to the zero eigenvalues in  $\Pi_o$ .

Conventional methods of estimation of (2.1) include reduced rank regression or maximum likelihood based on the assumption of Gaussian  $u_t$  and a Gaussian likelihood. This approach relies on known  $r_o$  and known  $p$ , so implementation requires preliminary order parameter estimation. The system can also be estimated by unrestricted fully modified vector autoregression (Phillips, 1995), which leads to consistent estimation of the unit roots in (2.1), the cointegrating vectors and the transient dynamics. This method does not require knowledge of  $r_o$  but does require knowledge of the lag order  $p$ . In addition, a semiparametric approach can be adopted in which  $r_o$  is estimated semiparametrically by order selection as in Cheng and Phillips (2010, 2012) followed by fully modified least squares regression to estimate the cointegrating matrix. This method achieves asymptotically efficient estimation of the long run relations (under Gaussianity) but does not estimate the transient relations.

The present paper explores the estimation of the parameters of (2.1) by Lasso-type regression, i.e. least squares (LS) regression with penalization. The resulting estimator is a shrinkage estimator. Specifically, the LS shrinkage estimator of  $(\Pi_o, B_o)$  where  $B_o = (B_{o,1}, \dots, B_{o,p})$  is defined as

$$(\widehat{\Pi}_n, \widehat{B}_n) = \arg \min_{\Pi, B_1, \dots, B_p \in R^{m \times m}} \left\{ \sum_{t=1}^n \left\| \Delta Y_t - \Pi Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j \leq p} B_j \Delta Y_{t-j} \right\|^2 + n \sum_{j=1}^p \lambda_{b,j,n} \|B_j\| + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi)\| \right\} \quad (2.4)$$

where  $\lambda_{b,j,n}$  and  $\lambda_{r,k,n}$  ( $j = 1, \dots, p$  and  $k = 1, \dots, m$ ) are tuning parameters that directly control the penalization,  $\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi)$  is the  $k$ -th row vector of  $Q_n \Pi$ , and  $Q_n$  denotes the normalized left eigenvector matrix of eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ . The matrix  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  is some first step (OLS) estimates of  $\Pi_o$  and is defined in (3.7). Given the tuning parameters, our procedure delivers a one step estimator of the model (2.1) with an implied estimate of the cointegrating rank (based on the number of non-zero rows of  $Q_n \widehat{\Pi}_n$ ) and an implied

estimate of the transient dynamic order  $p$  and transient dynamic structure (that is, the non zero elements of  $B_o$ ) based on the fitted value  $\widehat{B}_n$ .

Let  $\Phi'(\Pi_o) = [\Phi'_1(\Pi_o), \dots, \Phi'_m(\Pi_o)]$  denote the row vectors of  $Q\Pi_o$ . When  $\{u_t\}_{t \geq 1}$  is *iid* or a martingale difference sequence, the LS estimators  $(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}, \widehat{B}_{1st})$  of  $(\Pi_o, B_o)$  are well known to be consistent. The eigenvalues and corresponding eigenspace of  $\Pi_o$  can also be consistently estimated. Thus it seems intuitively clear that some form of adaptive penalization can be devised to consistently distinguish the zero and nonzero components in  $B_o$  and  $\Phi(\Pi_o)$ . We show that the shrinkage LS estimator defined in (2.4) enjoys these oracle-like properties, in the sense that the zero components in  $B_o$  and  $\Phi(\Pi_o)$  are estimated as zeros with probability approaching 1 (w.p.a.1). Thus,  $\Pi_o$  and the non-zero elements in  $B_o$  are estimated as if the form of the true model were known and inferences can be conducted as if we knew the true cointegration rank  $r_o$ .

If the transient behavior of (2.1) is misspecified and (for some given lag order  $p$ ) the error process  $\{u_t\}_{t \geq 1}$  is weakly dependent and  $r_o > 0$ , then consistent estimators of the full matrix  $(\Pi_o, B_o)$  are typically unavailable without further assumptions. However, the  $m - r_o$  zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$  can still be consistently estimated with an order  $n$  convergence rate, while the remaining eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$  are estimated with asymptotic bias at a  $\sqrt{n}$  convergence rate. The different convergence rates of the eigenvalues are important, because when the non-zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$  are occasionally (asymptotically) estimated as zeros, the different convergence rates are useful in consistently distinguishing the zero eigenvalues from the biasedly estimated non-zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$ . Specifically, we show that if the estimator of some non-zero eigenvalue of  $\Pi_o$  has probability limit zero under misspecification of the lag order, then this estimator will converge in probability to zero at the rate  $\sqrt{n}$ , while estimates of the zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$  all have convergence rate  $n$ . Hence the tuning parameters  $\{\lambda_{r,k,n}\}_{k=1}^m$  can be constructed in the way such that the adaptive penalties associated with estimates of zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$  will diverge to infinity at a rate faster than those of estimates of the nonzero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$ , even though the latter also converge to zero in probability. As we have prior knowledge about these different divergence rates in a potentially cointegrated system, we can impose explicit conditions on the convergence rate of the tuning parameters  $\{\lambda_{r,k,n}\}_{k=1}^m$  to ensure that only  $r_o$  rows of  $Q_n \widehat{\Pi}_n$  are adaptively shrunk to zero w.p.a.1.

For the empirical implementation of our approach, we provide data-driven procedures for selecting the tuning parameter of the penalty function in finite samples. For practical purposes our method is executed in the following steps, which are explained and demon-

strated in detail as the paper progresses.

(1) After preliminary LS estimation of the system, perform a first step GLS shrinkage estimation with tuning parameters

$$\lambda_{r,k,n} = \frac{2 \log(n)}{n} \|\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^{-2} \text{ and } \lambda_{b,j,n} = \frac{2m^2 \log(n)}{n} \|\widehat{B}_{j,1st}\|^{-2}$$

for  $k = 1, \dots, m$  and  $j = 1, \dots, p$ , where  $\|\phi_k(\Pi)\|$  denotes the  $k$ -th largest modulus of the eigenvalues  $\{\phi_k(\Pi)\}_{k=1}^m$  of the matrix  $\Pi$ <sup>1</sup> and  $\widehat{B}_{j,1st}$  is some first step (OLS) estimates of  $B_{o,j}$  ( $j = 1, \dots, p$ ).

(2) Construct adaptive tuning parameters using the first step GLS shrinkage estimates and the formulas in (6.10) and (6.11). Using the adaptive tuning parameters, obtain the GLS shrinkage estimator  $(\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}, \widehat{B}_{g,n})$  of  $(\Pi_o, B_o)$  - see (5.12) The cointegration rank selected by the shrinkage method is implied by the rank of the shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  and the lagged differences selected by the shrinkage method are implied by the nonzero matrices in  $\widehat{B}_{g,n}$ .

(3) The GLS shrinkage estimator contains shrinkage bias introduced by the penalty on the nonzero eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  and nonzero matrices in  $\widehat{B}_{g,n}$ . To remove this bias, run a (post Lasso) reduced rank regression based on the cointegration rank and the model selected in the GLS shrinkage estimation in step (2).

### 3 First Order VECM Estimation

This section considers the following simplified first order version of (2.1),

$$\Delta Y_t = \Pi_o Y_{t-1} + u_t = \alpha_o \beta_o' Y_{t-1} + u_t. \quad (3.1)$$

The model contains no deterministic trend and no lagged differences. Our focus in this simplified system is to outline the approach to cointegrating rank selection and develop key elements in the limit theory, showing consistency in rank selection and reduced rank coefficient matrix estimation. The theory is extended in subsequent sections to models of the form (2.1).

We start with the following condition on the innovation  $u_t$ .

---

<sup>1</sup>Throughout this chapter, for any  $m \times m$  matrix  $\Pi$ , we order the eigenvalues of  $\Pi$  in decreasing order by their modulus, i.e.  $\|\phi_1(\Pi)\| \geq \|\phi_2(\Pi)\| \geq \dots \geq \|\phi_m(\Pi)\|$ . When there is a pair of complex conjugate eigenvalues, we order the one with a positive imaginary part before the other.



**Assumption 3.1 (WN)**  $\{u_t\}_{t \geq 1}$  is an  $m$ -dimensional iid process with zero mean and nonsingular covariance matrix  $\Omega_u$ .

Assumption 3.1 ensures that the full parameter matrix  $\Pi_o$  is consistently estimable in this simplified system. The iid condition could, of course, be weakened to martingale differences with no material changes in what follows. Under Assumption 3.1, partial sums of  $u_t$  satisfy the functional law

$$n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^{\lfloor n \cdot \rfloor} u_t \rightarrow_d B_u(\cdot), \quad (3.2)$$

where  $B_u(\cdot)$  is vector Brownian motion with variance matrix  $\Omega_u$ .

**Assumption 3.2 (RR)** (i) The determinantal equation  $|I - (I + \Pi_o)\lambda| = 0$  has roots on or outside the unit circle; (ii) the matrix  $\Pi_o$  has rank  $r_o$ , with  $0 \leq r_o \leq m$ ; (iii) if  $r_o > 0$ , then the matrix  $R = I_{r_o} + \beta'_o \alpha_o$  has eigenvalues within the unit circle.

Let  $\mathcal{S}_\phi = \{k : \Phi_k(\Pi_o) \neq 0\}$  be the index set of nonzero rows of  $Q\Pi_o$  and similarly  $\mathcal{S}_\phi^c = \{k : \Phi_k(\Pi_o) = 0\}$  denote the index set of zero rows of  $Q\Pi_o$ . By virtue of Assumption RR and the properties of  $Q$ , we know that  $\mathcal{S}_\phi = \{1, \dots, r_o\}$  and  $\mathcal{S}_\phi^c = \{r_o + 1, \dots, m\}$ . It follows that consistent selection of the rank of  $\Pi_o$  is equivalent to the consistent recovery of the zero rows in  $\Phi(\Pi_o) = Q\Pi_o$ .

Using the matrix  $Q$ , (3.1) transforms as

$$\Delta Z_t = \Xi_o Z_{t-1} + w_t, \quad (3.3)$$

where

$$Z_t = \begin{pmatrix} \beta'_o Y_t \\ \alpha'_{o,\perp} Y_t \end{pmatrix} \equiv \begin{pmatrix} Z_{1,t} \\ Z_{2,t} \end{pmatrix}, \quad w_t = \begin{pmatrix} \beta'_o u_t \\ \alpha'_{o,\perp} u_t \end{pmatrix} \equiv \begin{pmatrix} w_{1,t} \\ w_{2,t} \end{pmatrix}$$

and  $\Xi_o = Q\Pi_o Q^{-1}$ . Assumption 3.2 leads to the following Wold representation for  $Z_{1,t}$

$$Z_{1,t} = \beta'_o Y_t = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} R^i \beta'_o u_{t-i} = R(L) \beta'_o u_t, \quad (3.4)$$

and the partial sum Granger representation,

$$Y_t = C \sum_{s=1}^t u_s + \alpha_o (\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} R(L) \beta'_o u_t + CY_0, \quad (3.5)$$

where  $C = \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \alpha'_{o,\perp}$ . Under Assumption 3.2 and (3.2), we have the functional law

$$n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^{[n]} w_t \rightarrow_d B_w(\cdot) = QB_u(\cdot) = \begin{bmatrix} \beta'_o B_u(\cdot) \\ \alpha'_{o,\perp} B_u(\cdot) \end{bmatrix} \equiv \begin{bmatrix} B_{w_1}(\cdot) \\ B_{w_2}(\cdot) \end{bmatrix}$$

for  $w_t = Qu_t$ , so that

$$n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^{[n]} Z_{1,t} = n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^{[n]} \beta'_o Y_t \rightarrow_d -(\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} B_{w_1}(\cdot), \quad (3.6)$$

since  $R(1) = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} R^i = (I - R)^{-1} = -(\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1}$ . Also

$$n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{1,t-1} Z'_{1,t-1} = n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n \beta'_o Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \beta_o \rightarrow_p \Sigma_{z_1 z_1},$$

where  $\Sigma_{z_1 z_1} \equiv \text{Var} [\beta'_o Y_t] = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} R^i \beta'_o \Omega_u \beta_o R^{i'}$ .

The unrestricted LS estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  of  $\Pi_o$  is

$$\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} = \arg \min_{\Pi \in R^{m \times m}} \sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - \Pi Y_{t-1}\|^2 = \left( \sum_{t=1}^n \Delta Y_t Y'_{t-1} \right) \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \right)^{-1}. \quad (3.7)$$

The asymptotic properties of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  and its eigenvalues are described in Lemma 10.2. The shrinkage LS estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  of  $\Pi_o$  is defined as

$$\widehat{\Pi}_n = \arg \min_{\Pi \in R^{m \times m}} \sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - \Pi Y_{t-1}\|^2 + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi)\|. \quad (3.8)$$

We first show the consistency of the LS shrinkage estimate  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$ .

**Theorem 3.1 (Consistency)** *Let  $\delta_{r,n} = \max_{k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n}$ , then under Assumptions WN, RR and  $\delta_{r,n} = o_p(1)$ , the LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  is consistent, i.e.  $\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o = o_p(1)$ .*

When consistent shrinkage estimators are considered, Theorem 3.1 extends Theorem

1 of Caner and Knight (2009) who used shrinkage techniques to perform a unit root test. As the eigenvalues  $\phi_k(\Pi)$  of the matrix  $\Pi$  are continuous functions of  $\Pi$ , we deduce from the consistency of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  and continuous mapping that  $\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_n) \rightarrow_p \phi_k(\Pi_o)$  for all  $k = 1, \dots, m$ . Theorem 3.1 implies that the nonzero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$  are estimated as non-zeros, which means that the rank of  $\Pi_o$  will not be under-selected. However, consistency of the estimates of the non-zero eigenvalues is not necessary for consistent cointegration rank selection. In that case what is essential is that the probability limits of the estimates of those (non-zero) eigenvalues are not zeros or at least that their convergence rates are slower than those of estimates of the zero eigenvalues. This point will be pursued in the following section where it is demonstrated that consistent estimation of the cointegrating rank continues to hold for weakly dependent innovations  $\{u_t\}_{t \geq 1}$  even though full consistency of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  does not generally apply in that case.

Our next result gives the convergence rate of the shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$ .

**Theorem 3.2 (Rate of Convergence)** *Define  $D_n = \text{diag}(n^{-\frac{1}{2}}I_{r_o}, n^{-1}I_{m-r_o})$ , then under the conditions of Theorem 3.1, the LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  satisfies the following:*

- (a) if  $r_o = 0$ , then  $\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o = O_p(n^{-1} + n^{-1}\delta_{r,n})$ ;
- (b) if  $0 < r_o \leq m$ , then  $(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o)Q^{-1}D_n^{-1} = O_p(1 + n^{\frac{1}{2}}\delta_{r,n})$ .

The term  $\delta_{r,n}$  represents the shrinkage bias that the penalty function introduces to the LS shrinkage estimator. If the convergence rate of  $\lambda_{r,k,n}$  ( $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi$ ) is fast enough such that  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\delta_{r,n} = O_p(1)$ , then Theorem 3.2 implies that  $\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o = O_p(n^{-1})$  when  $r_o = 0$  and  $(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o)Q^{-1}D_n^{-1} = O_p(1)$  otherwise. Hence, under Assumption WN, RR and  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\delta_{r,n} = O_p(1)$ , the LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  has the same convergence rate of the LS estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  (see, Lemma 10.2 in the appendix). However, we next show that if the tuning parameter  $\lambda_{r,k,n}$  ( $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$ ) does not converge to zero too fast, then the correct rank restriction  $r = r_o$  is automatically imposed on the LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  w.p.a.1.

Let  $S_{n,\phi}$  denote the index set of the nonzero rows of  $Q_n\widehat{\Pi}_n$  and its complement  $S_{n,\phi}^c$  be the index set of the zero rows of  $Q_n\widehat{\Pi}_n$ . We subdivide the matrix  $Q_n$  as  $Q'_n = [Q'_{\alpha,n}, Q'_{\alpha_\perp,n}]$ , where  $Q_{\alpha,n}$  and  $Q_{\alpha_\perp,n}$  are the first  $r_o$  rows and the last  $m - r_o$  rows of  $Q_n$  respectively. Under Lemma 10.2 and Theorem 3.1,

$$Q_{\alpha,n}\widehat{\Pi}_n = Q_{\alpha,n}\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} + o_p(1) = \Lambda_{\alpha,n}Q_{\alpha,n} + o_p(1) \quad (3.9)$$

and similarly

$$Q_{\alpha_{\perp},n}\widehat{\Pi}_n = Q_{\alpha_{\perp},n}\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} + o_p(1) = \Lambda_{\alpha_{\perp},n}Q_{\alpha_{\perp},n} + o_p(1) = o_p(1), \quad (3.10)$$

where  $\Lambda_{\alpha,n} = \text{diag}[\phi_1(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}), \dots, \phi_{r_o}(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})]$  and  $\Lambda_{\alpha_{\perp},n} = \text{diag}[\phi_{r_o+1}(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}), \dots, \phi_m(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})]$ . Result in (3.9) implies that the first  $r_o$  rows of  $Q_n\widehat{\Pi}_n$  are nonzero w.p.a.1., while the results in (3.10) means that the last  $m - r_o$  rows of  $Q_n\widehat{\Pi}_n$  are arbitrarily close to zero with w.p.a.1. Under (3.9) we deduce that  $S_{\phi} \subseteq S_{n,\phi}$ . However, (3.10) is insufficient for showing that  $S_{\phi}^c \subseteq S_{n,\phi}^c$ , because in that case, what we need to show is  $Q_{\alpha_{\perp},n}\widehat{\Pi}_n = 0$  w.p.a.1.

**Theorem 3.3 (Super Efficiency)** *Suppose that Assumptions WN and RR are satisfied. If  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\delta_{r,n} = O_p(1)$  and  $\lambda_{r,k,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$  for  $k \in \mathcal{S}_{\phi}^c$ , then*

$$\Pr\left(Q_{\alpha_{\perp},n}\widehat{\Pi}_n = 0\right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty. \quad (3.11)$$

Theorem 3.3 requires the tuning parameters related to the zero and non-zero components have different asymptotic behaviors. As we do not have any prior information about the zero and non-zero components, it is clear that some sort of adaptive penalization should appear in the tuning parameters  $\{\lambda_{r,k,n}\}_{k=1}^m$ . Such adaptive penalty is constructed in (6.1) of Section 6 and sufficient conditions for  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\delta_{r,n} = O_p(1)$  and  $\lambda_{r,k,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$  for  $k \in \mathcal{S}_{\phi}^c$  are provided in Lemma 6.1.

Combining Theorem 3.1 and Theorem 3.3, we deduce that

$$\Pr(\mathcal{S}_{n,\phi} = \mathcal{S}_{\phi}) \rightarrow 1, \quad (3.12)$$

which implies consistent cointegration rank selection, giving the following result.

**Corollary 3.4** *Under the conditions of Theorem 3.3, we have*

$$\Pr\left(r(\widehat{\Pi}_n) = r_o\right) \rightarrow 1 \quad (3.13)$$

as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ , where  $r(\widehat{\Pi}_n)$  denotes the rank of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$ .

From Corollary 3.4, we can deduce that the rank constraint  $r(\Pi) = r_o$  is imposed on the LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  w.p.a.1. As  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  satisfies the rank constraint w.p.a.1, we expect it has better properties in comparison to the OLS estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  which assumes the true rank is unknown. This conjecture is confirmed in the following theorem.

**Theorem 3.5 (Limiting Distribution)** *Under the conditions of Theorem 3.3 and  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\delta_{r,n} = o_p(1)$ , we have*

$$\left(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o\right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \rightarrow_d \begin{pmatrix} B_{m,1} & \alpha_o(\alpha'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o B_{m,2} \end{pmatrix} \quad (3.14)$$

where

$$B_{m,1} \equiv N(0, \Omega_u \otimes \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1}) \text{ and } B_{m,2} \equiv \int dB_u B'_{w_2} \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1}.$$

From (3.14) and the continuous mapping theorem (CMT),

$$Q \left(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o\right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \rightarrow_d \begin{pmatrix} \beta'_o B_{m,1} & \beta'_o \alpha_o(\alpha'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o B_{m,2} \\ \alpha'_{o,\perp} B_{m,1} & 0 \end{pmatrix}. \quad (3.15)$$

Similarly, from Lemma 10.2.(a) in Appendix and CMT

$$Q \left(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o\right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \rightarrow_d \begin{pmatrix} \beta'_o B_{m,1} & \beta'_o B_{m,2} \\ \alpha'_{o,\perp} B_{m,1} & \alpha'_{o,\perp} B_{m,2} \end{pmatrix}. \quad (3.16)$$

Compared with the OLS estimator, we see that in the LS shrinkage estimation, the right lower  $(m - r_o) \times (m - r_o)$  submatrix of  $Q\Pi_o Q^{-1}$  is estimated at a faster rate than  $n$ . The improved property of the LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  arises from the fact that the correct rank restriction  $r(\widehat{\Pi}_n) = r_o$  is satisfied w.p.a.1, leading to the lower right zero block in the limit distribution (3.14) after normalization.

Compared with the oracle reduced rank regression (RRR) estimator (i.e. the RRR estimator informed by knowledge of the true rank, see e.g. Johansen, 1995, Phillips, 1998 and Anderson, 2002), the LS shrinkage estimator suffers from second order bias in the limit distribution (3.14), which is evident in the endogeneity bias of the factor  $\int dB_u B'_{w_2}$  in the limit matrix  $B_{m,2}$ . Accordingly, to remove the endogeneity bias we introduce the generalized least square (GLS) shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  which satisfies the weighted extremum problem

$$\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n} = \arg \min_{\Pi \in R^{m \times m}} \sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - \Pi Y_{t-1}\|_{\widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1}}^2 + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi)\|, \quad (3.17)$$

where  $\widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}$  is some consistent estimator of  $\Omega_u$ . GLS methods enable efficient estimation in cointegrating systems with known rank (Phillips, 1991a, 1991b). Here they are used to achieve efficient estimation with unknown rank. In fact, the asymptotic distribution of

$\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  is the same as that of the oracle RRR estimator.

**Corollary 3.6 (Oracle Properties)** *Suppose Assumptions 3.1 and 3.2 hold. If  $\widehat{\Omega}_{u,n} \rightarrow_p \Omega_u$  and the tuning parameter satisfies  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\delta_{r,n} = o_p(1)$  and  $\lambda_{r,k,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$  for  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$ , then*

$$\Pr\left(r(\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}) = r_o\right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty \quad (3.18)$$

and  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  has limit distribution

$$\left(\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n} - \Pi_o\right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \rightarrow_d \left( \begin{array}{cc} B_{m,1} & \alpha_o(\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \int dB_{u \cdot w_2} B'_{w_2} (\int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2})^{-1} \\ \alpha'_{o,\perp} B_{m,1} & 0 \end{array} \right), \quad (3.19)$$

where  $B_{u \cdot w_2}(\cdot) \equiv B_u(\cdot) - \Sigma_{uw_2} \Sigma_{w_2 w_2}^{-1} B_{w_2}(\cdot)$ .

From (3.19), we can invoke the CMT to obtain

$$Q \left(\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n} - \Pi_o\right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \rightarrow_d \left( \begin{array}{cc} \beta'_o B_{m,1} & \int dB_{u \cdot w_2} B'_{w_2} (\int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2})^{-1} \\ \alpha'_{o,\perp} B_{m,1} & 0 \end{array} \right), \quad (3.20)$$

which implies that the GLS shrinkage estimate  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  has the same limiting distribution as that of the oracle RRR estimator.

**Remark 3.7** *In the triangular representation of a cointegration system studied in Phillips (1991a), we have  $\alpha_o = [I_{r_o}, \mathbf{0}_{r_o \times (m-r_o)}]'$ ,  $\beta_o = [-I_{r_o}, O_o]'$  and  $w_2 = u_2$ . Moreover, we obtain*

$$\Pi_o = \begin{pmatrix} -I_{r_o} & O_o \\ 0 & \mathbf{0}_{m-r_o} \end{pmatrix}, \quad Q = \begin{pmatrix} -I_{r_o} & O_o \\ 0 & I_{m-r_o} \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } Q^{-1} = \begin{pmatrix} -I_{r_o} & O_o \\ 0 & I_{m-r_o} \end{pmatrix}.$$

By the consistent rank selection, the GLS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  can be decomposed as  $\widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} \widehat{\beta}'_{g,n}$  w.p.a.1, where  $\widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} \equiv [\widehat{A}'_{g,n}, \widehat{B}'_{g,n}]'$  is the first  $r_o$  columns of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  and  $\widehat{\beta}_{g,n} = [-I_{r_o}, \widehat{O}_{g,n}]'$ . From Corollary 3.6, we deduce that

$$\sqrt{n} \left(\widehat{A}_{g,n} - I_{r_o}\right) \rightarrow_d N(0, \Omega_{u_1} \otimes \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1}) \quad (3.21)$$

and

$$n \widehat{A}_{g,n} \left(\widehat{O}_{g,n} - O_o\right) \rightarrow_d \int dB_{u_1 \cdot 2} B'_{u_2} \left(\int B_{u_2} B'_{u_2}\right)^{-1} \quad (3.22)$$

where  $B_{u_1}$  and  $B_{u_2}$  denotes the first  $r_o$  and last  $m - r_o$  vectors of  $B_u$ , and  $B_{u_{1.2}} = B_{u_1} - \Omega_{u,12}\Omega_{u,22}^{-1}B_{u_2}$ . Under (3.21), (3.22) and CMT, we deduce that

$$n\left(\widehat{O}_{g,n} - O_o\right) \rightarrow_d \int dB_{u_{1.2}}B'_{u_2} \left(\int B_{u_2}B'_{u_2}\right)^{-1}. \quad (3.23)$$

Evidently from (3.23) the GLS estimator  $\widehat{O}_{g,n}$  of the cointegration matrix  $O_o$  is asymptotically equivalent to the maximum likelihood estimator studied in Phillips (1991a) and has the usual mixed normal limit distribution, facilitating inference.

## 4 Extension I: Estimation with Weakly Dependent Innovations

In this section we study shrinkage reduced rank estimation in a scenario where the equation innovations  $\{u_t\}_{t \geq 1}$  are weakly dependent. Specifically, we assume that  $\{u_t\}_{t \geq 1}$  is generated by a linear process satisfying the following condition.

**Assumption 4.1 (LP)** Let  $D(L) = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} D_j L^j$ , where  $D_0 = I_m$  and  $D(1)$  has full rank. Let  $u_t$  have the Wold representation

$$u_t = D(L)\varepsilon_t = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} D_j \varepsilon_{t-j}, \text{ with } \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} j^{\frac{1}{2}} \|D_j\| < \infty, \quad (4.1)$$

where  $\varepsilon_t$  is iid  $(0, \Sigma_{\varepsilon\varepsilon})$  with  $\Sigma_{\varepsilon\varepsilon}$  positive definite and finite fourth moments.

Denote the long-run variance of  $\{u_t\}_{t \geq 1}$  as  $\Omega_u = \sum_{h=-\infty}^{\infty} \Sigma_{uu}(h)$ . From the Wold representation in (4.1), we have  $\Omega_u = D(1)\Sigma_{\varepsilon\varepsilon}D(1)'$ , which is positive definite because  $D(1)$  has full rank and  $\Sigma_{\varepsilon\varepsilon}$  is positive definite. The fourth moment assumption is needed for the limit distribution of sample autocovariances in the case of misspecified transient dynamics.

As expected, under general weak dependence assumptions on  $u_t$ , the simple reduced rank regression models (2.1) and (3.1) are susceptible to the effects of potential misspecification in the transient dynamics. These effects bear on the stationary components in the system. In particular, due to the centering term  $\Sigma_{uz_1}(1)$  in (10.72), both the OLS estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  and the shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  are asymptotically biased. Specifically, we

show that  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  has the following probability limit (see, Lemma 10.4 in the appendix),

$$\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \rightarrow_p \Pi_1 \equiv Q^{-1}H_oQ + \Pi_o, \quad (4.2)$$

where  $H_o = Q [\Sigma_{u_{z_1}}(1)\Sigma_{z_1z_1}^{-1}, 0_{m \times (m-r_o)}]$ . Note that

$$\Pi_1 = Q^{-1}H_oQ + \Pi_o = [\alpha_o + \Sigma_{u_{z_1}}(1)\Sigma_{z_1z_1}^{-1}] \beta'_o = \tilde{\alpha}_o \beta'_o, \quad (4.3)$$

which implies that the asymptotic bias of the OLS estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  is introduced via the bias in the pseudo true value limit  $\tilde{\alpha}_o$ . Observe also that  $\Pi_1 = \tilde{\alpha}_o \beta'_o$  has rank at most equal to  $r_o$ , the number of rows in  $\beta'_o$ .

Denote the rank of  $\Pi_1$  by  $r_1$ . Then, by virtue of the expression  $\Pi_1 = \tilde{\alpha}_o \beta'_o$ , we have  $r_1 \leq r_o$  as indicated. Without loss of generality, we decompose  $\Pi_1$  as  $\Pi_1 = \tilde{\alpha}_1 \tilde{\beta}'_1$  where  $\tilde{\alpha}_1$  and  $\tilde{\beta}_1$  are  $m \times r_1$  matrices with full rank. Denote the orthogonal complements of  $\tilde{\alpha}_1$  and  $\tilde{\beta}_1$  as  $\tilde{\alpha}_{1\perp}$  and  $\tilde{\beta}_{1\perp}$  respectively. Similarly, we decompose  $\tilde{\beta}_{1\perp}$  as  $\tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} = (\tilde{\beta}_\perp, \beta_{o\perp})$  where  $\tilde{\beta}_\perp$  is an  $m \times (r_o - r_1)$  matrix. By the definition of  $\Pi_1$ , we know that  $\beta_{o,\perp}$  is the right eigenvectors of the zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_1$ . Thus,  $\tilde{\beta}_1$  lies in some subspace of the space spanned by  $\beta_o$ . Let  $Q_1$  denote the ordered<sup>2</sup> left eigenvector matrix of  $\Pi_1$  and define  $\Phi_{1,k}(\Pi) = Q_1(k)\Pi$ , where  $Q_1(k)$  denotes the  $k$ -th row of  $Q_1$ . It is clear that the index set  $\tilde{\mathcal{S}}_\phi \equiv \{k : \Phi_{1,k}(\Pi_1) \neq 0\} = \{1, \dots, r_1\}$  is a subset of  $S_\phi = \{k : \Phi_k(\Pi_o) \neq 0\} = \{1, \dots, r_o\}$ . We next derive the "consistency" of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$ .

**Corollary 4.1** *Let  $\tilde{\delta}_{r,n} = \max_{k \in \tilde{\mathcal{S}}_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n}$ , then under Assumptions RR, LP and  $\tilde{\delta}_{r,n} = o_p(1)$ , the LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  is consistent, i.e.  $\widehat{\Pi}_n \rightarrow_p \Pi_1$ .*

Corollary 4.1 implies that the shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  has the same probability limit as that of the OLS estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ . As the pseudo limit  $\Pi_1$  may have more zero eigenvalues, compared with Theorem 3.1, Corollary 4.1 imposes weaker condition on the tuning parameters  $\{\lambda_{r,k,n}\}_{k=1}^m$ . The next corollary provides the convergence rate of the LS shrinkage estimate to the pseudo true parameter matrix  $\Pi_1$ .

**Corollary 4.2** *Under Assumptions RR, LP and  $\tilde{\delta}_{r,n} = o_p(1)$ , the LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  satisfies*

$$(a) \text{ if } r_o = 0, \text{ then } \widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_1 = O_p(n^{-1} + n^{-1}\tilde{\delta}_{r,n});$$

---

<sup>2</sup>The eigenvectors in  $Q_1$  are ordered according to the magnitudes of the eigenvalues, i.e. the ordering of the eigenvalues of  $\Pi_1$ .



(b) if  $0 < r_o \leq m$ , then  $(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_1) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} = O_p(1 + n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\delta}_{r,n})$ .

Recall that  $Q_n$  is the normalized left eigenvector matrix of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ . Decompose  $Q'_n$  as  $[Q'_{\widetilde{\alpha},n}, Q'_{\widetilde{\alpha}_\perp,n}]$ , where  $Q_{\widetilde{\alpha},n}$  and  $Q_{\widetilde{\alpha}_\perp,n}$  are the first  $r_1$  and last  $m - r_1$  rows of  $Q_n$  respectively. Under Corollary 4.1 and Lemma 10.4.(a),

$$Q_{\widetilde{\alpha},n} \widehat{\Pi}_n = Q_{\widetilde{\alpha},n} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} + o_p(1) = \Lambda_{\widetilde{\alpha},n} Q_{\widetilde{\alpha},n} + o_p(1) \quad (4.4)$$

where  $\Lambda_{\widetilde{\alpha},n}$  is a diagonal matrix with the ordered first (largest)  $r_1$  eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ . (4.4) and Lemma 10.4.(b) implies that the first  $r_1$  rows of  $Q_n \widehat{\Pi}_n$  are estimated as nonzero w.p.a.1. On the other hand, by Corollary 4.1 and Lemma 10.4.(a),

$$Q_{\widetilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \widehat{\Pi}_n = Q_{\widetilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} + o_p(1) = \Lambda_{\widetilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} Q_{\widetilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} + o_p(1) \quad (4.5)$$

where  $\Lambda_{\widetilde{\alpha}_\perp,n}$  is a diagonal matrix with the ordered last (smallest)  $m - r_1$  eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ . Under Lemma 10.4.(b) and (c), we know that  $Q_{\widetilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \widehat{\Pi}_n$  converges to zero in probability, while its first  $r_o - r_1$  rows and the last  $m - r_o$  rows have the convergence rates  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}$  and  $n$  respectively. We next show that the last  $m - r_o$  rows of  $Q_n \widehat{\Pi}_n$  are estimated as zeros w.p.a.1.

**Corollary 4.3 (Super Efficiency)** *Under Assumptions LP and RR, if  $\lambda_{r,k,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$  for  $k \in S_\phi^c$  and  $n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\delta}_{r,n} = O_p(1)$ , then we have*

$$\Pr \left( Q_n(k) \widehat{\Pi}_n = 0 \right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty, \quad (4.6)$$

for any  $k \in S_\phi^c$ .

Corollary 4.3 implies that  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  has at least  $m - r_o$  eigenvalues estimated as zero w.p.a.1. However, the matrix  $\Pi_1$  may have more zero eigenvalues than  $\Pi_o$ . To ensure consistent cointegration rank selection, we need to show that the  $r_o - r_1$  zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_1$  are estimated as non-zeros w.p.a.1. From Lemma 10.4, we see that  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  has  $m - r_o$  eigenvalues which converge to zero at the rate  $n$  and  $r_o - r_1$  eigenvalues which converge to zero at the rate  $\sqrt{n}$ . The different convergence rates of the estimates of the zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_1$  enable us to empirically distinguish the estimates of the  $m - r_o$  zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_1$  from the estimates of the  $r_o - r_1$  zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_1$ , as illustrated in the following corollary.

**Corollary 4.4** *Under Assumptions LP and RR, if  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\lambda_{r,k,n} = o_p(1)$  for  $k \in \{r_1+1, \dots, r_o\}$  and  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\tilde{\delta}_{r,n} = O_p(1)$ , then we have*

$$\Pr\left(Q_n(k)\widehat{\Pi}_n \neq 0\right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty, \quad (4.7)$$

for any  $k \in \{r_1 + 1, \dots, r_o\}$ .

In the proof of Corollary 4.4, we show that  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}Q_n(k)\widehat{\Pi}_n$  converges in distribution to some non-degenerated continuous random vectors, which is a stronger result than (4.7). Corollary 4.2 and Corollary 4.4 implies that  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  has at least  $m-r_o$  eigenvalues not estimated as zeros w.p.a.1. Hence Corollary 4.2, Corollary 4.3 and Corollary 4.4 give us the following result immediately.

**Theorem 4.5** *Suppose that Assumptions LP and RR are satisfied. If  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\tilde{\delta}_{r,n} = O_p(1)$ ,  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\lambda_{r,k,n} = o_p(1)$  for  $k \in \{r_1 + 1, \dots, r_o\}$  and  $\lambda_{r,k',n} \rightarrow_p \infty$  for  $k' \in S_\phi^c$ , then we have*

$$\Pr\left(r(\widehat{\Pi}_n) = r_o\right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty, \quad (4.8)$$

as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ , where  $r(\widehat{\Pi}_n)$  denotes the rank of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$ .

Compared with Theorem 3.3, Theorem 4.5 imposes similar conditions on the tuning parameters  $\{\lambda_{r,k,n}\}_{k=1}^m$ . It is clear that when the pseudo limit  $\Pi_1$  preserves the rank of  $\Pi_o$ , i.e.  $r_o = r_1$ , we do not need to show Corollary 4.4 because Theorem 4.5 follows by Corollary 4.2 and Corollary 4.3. In that case, Theorem 4.5 imposes the same conditions on the tuning parameters, i.e.  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\tilde{\delta}_{r,n} = O_p(1)$  and  $\lambda_{r,k,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$  for  $k \in S_\phi^c$ , where  $\tilde{\delta}_{r,n} = \delta_{r,n}$ . On the other hand, when  $r_1 < r_o$ , the conditions in Theorem 4.5 is stronger, because it requires  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\lambda_{r,k,n} = o_p(1)$  for  $k \in \{r_1 + 1, \dots, r_o\}$ . In Section 6, we construct empirically available tuning parameters which are shown to satisfy the conditions of Theorem 4.5 without knowing whether  $r_1 = r_o$  or  $r_1 < r_o$ .

Theorem 4.5 states that the true cointegration rank  $r_o$  can be consistently selected, though the matrix  $\Pi_o$  is not consistently estimable. Moreover, when the probability limit  $\Pi_1$  of the LS shrinkage estimator has rank less than  $r_o$ , Theorem 4.5 ensures that only  $r_o$  rank is selected in the LS shrinkage estimation. This result is new in the shrinkage based model selection literature, as the Lasso-type of techniques are usually advocated because of their ability of shrinking small estimates (in magnitude) to be zeros in estimation. However,

in Corollary 4.4, we show the LS shrinkage estimation does not shrink the estimates of the extra  $r_o - r_1$  zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_1$  to be zero.

## 5 Extension II: Estimation with Explicit Transients

This section considers estimation of the general model

$$\Delta Y_t = \Pi_o Y_{t-1} + \sum_{j=1}^p B_{o,j} \Delta Y_{t-j} + u_t \quad (5.1)$$

with simultaneous cointegrating rank selection and lag order selection. Recall that the unknown parameters  $(\Pi_o, B_o)$  are estimated by penalized LS estimation

$$\begin{aligned} (\widehat{\Pi}_n, \widehat{B}_n) = \arg \min_{\Pi, B_1, \dots, B_p \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times m}} & \left\{ \sum_{t=1}^n \left\| \Delta Y_t - \Pi Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p B_j \Delta Y_{t-j} \right\|^2 \right. \\ & \left. + n \sum_{j=1}^p \lambda_{b,j,n} \|B_j\| + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi)\| \right\}. \quad (5.2) \end{aligned}$$

For consistent lag order selection the model should be consistently estimable and it is assumed that the given  $p$  in (5.1) is such that the error term  $u_t$  satisfies Assumption 3.1.

Define

$$C(\phi) = \Pi_o + \sum_{j=0}^p B_{o,j} (1 - \phi) \phi^j, \text{ where } B_{o,0} = -I_m.$$

The following assumption extends Assumption 3.2 to accommodate the general structure in (5.1).

**Assumption 5.1 (GRR)** (i) The determinantal equation  $|C(\phi)| = 0$  has roots on or outside the unit circle; (ii) the matrix  $\Pi_o$  has rank  $r_o$ , with  $0 \leq r_o \leq m$ ; (iii) the  $(m - r_o) \times (m - r_o)$  matrix

$$\alpha'_{o,\perp} \left( I_m - \sum_{j=1}^p B_{o,j} \right) \beta_{o,\perp} \quad (5.3)$$

is nonsingular.

Under Assumption 5.1, the time series  $Y_t$  has following partial sum representation,

$$Y_t = C_B \sum_{s=1}^t u_s + \Xi(L)u_t + C_B Y_0 \quad (5.4)$$

where  $C_B = \beta_{o,\perp} \left[ \alpha'_{o,\perp} \left( I_m - \sum_{j=1}^p B_{o,j} \right) \beta_{o,\perp} \right]^{-1} \alpha'_{o,\perp}$  and  $\Xi(L)u_t = \sum_{s=0}^{\infty} \Xi_s u_{t-s}$  is a stationary process. From the partial sum representation in (5.4), we deduce that  $\beta'_o Y_t = \beta'_o \Xi(L)u_t$  and  $\Delta Y_{t-j}$  ( $j = 0, \dots, p$ ) are stationary.

Define an  $m(p+1) \times m(p+1)$  rotation matrix  $Q_B$  and its inverse  $Q_B^{-1}$  as

$$Q_B \equiv \begin{pmatrix} \beta'_o & 0 \\ 0 & I_{mp} \\ \alpha'_{o,\perp} & 0 \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } Q_B^{-1} = \begin{pmatrix} \alpha_o(\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} & 0 & \beta_{o,\perp}(\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \\ 0 & I_{mp} & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Denote  $\Delta X_{t-1} = [\Delta Y'_{t-1}, \dots, \Delta Y'_{t-p}]'$  and then the model in (5.1) can be written as

$$\Delta Y_t = \begin{bmatrix} \Pi_o & B_o \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} Y_{t-1} \\ \Delta X_{t-1} \end{bmatrix} + u_t. \quad (5.5)$$

Let

$$Z_{t-1} = Q_B \begin{bmatrix} Y_{t-1} \\ \Delta X_{t-1} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} Z_{3,t-1} \\ Z_{2,t-1} \end{bmatrix}, \quad (5.6)$$

where  $Z'_{3,t-1} = \begin{bmatrix} Y'_{t-1} \beta_o & \Delta X'_{t-1} \end{bmatrix}$  is a stationary process and  $Z_{2,t-1} = \alpha'_{o,\perp} Y_{t-1}$  comprises the  $I(1)$  components. Denote the index set of the zero components in  $B_o$  as  $\mathcal{S}_B^c$  such that  $\|B_{o,j}\| = 0$  for all  $j \in \mathcal{S}_B^c$  and  $\|B_{o,j}\| \neq 0$  otherwise. We next derive the asymptotic properties of the LS shrinkage estimator  $(\widehat{\Pi}_n, \widehat{B}_n)$  defined in (5.2).

**Lemma 5.1** *Suppose that Assumptions WN and GRR are satisfied. If  $\delta_{r,n} = o_p(1)$  and  $\delta_{b,n} = o_p(1)$  where  $\delta_{b,n} \equiv \max_{j \in \mathcal{S}_B} \lambda_{b,j,n}$ , then the LS shrinkage estimator  $(\widehat{\Pi}_n, \widehat{B}_n)$  satisfies*

$$\left[ (\widehat{\Pi}_n, \widehat{B}_n) - (\Pi_o, B_o) \right] Q_B^{-1} D_{n,B}^{-1} = O_p(1 + n^{\frac{1}{2}} \delta_{r,n} + n^{\frac{1}{2}} \delta_{b,n}) \quad (5.7)$$

where  $D_{n,B} = \text{diag}(n^{-\frac{1}{2}} I_{r_o+mp}, n^{-1} I_{m-r_o})$ .

Lemma 5.1 implies that the LS shrinkage estimators  $(\widehat{\Pi}_n, \widehat{B}_n)$  have the same convergence rates as the OLS estimators  $(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}, \widehat{B}_{1st})$  (see, Lemma 10.6.a). We next show that if

the tuning parameters  $\lambda_{r,k,n}$  and  $\lambda_{b,j,n}$  ( $k \in \mathcal{S}_B^c$  and  $j \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$ ) converge to zero but not too fast, then the zero rows of  $Q\Pi_o$  and zero matrices in  $B_o$  are estimated as zero w.p.a.1. Let the zero rows of  $Q_n\widehat{\Pi}_n$  be indexed by  $\mathcal{S}_{n,\phi}^c$  and the zero matrix in  $\widehat{B}_n$  be indexed by  $\mathcal{S}_{n,B}^c$ .

**Theorem 5.1** *Suppose that Assumptions WN and GRR are satisfied. If the tuning parameters satisfy  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}(\delta_{r,n} + \delta_{b,n}) = O_p(1)$ ,  $\lambda_{r,k,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$  and  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\lambda_{b,j,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$  for  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$  and  $j \in \mathcal{S}_B^c$ , then we have*

$$\Pr\left(Q_{\alpha,n}\widehat{\Pi}_n = 0\right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty; \quad (5.8)$$

and for all  $j \in \mathcal{S}_B^c$

$$\Pr\left(\widehat{B}_{n,j} = \mathbf{0}_{m \times m}\right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty. \quad (5.9)$$

Theorem 5.1 indicates that the zero rows of  $Q\Pi_o$  (and hence the zero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$ ) and the zero matrices in  $B_o$  are estimated as zeros w.p.a.1. Thus Lemma 5.1 and Theorem 5.1 imply consistent cointegration rank selection and consistent lag order selection.

We next derive the centered limit distribution of the shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Theta}_S = \left(\widehat{\Pi}_n, \widehat{B}_{\mathcal{S}_B}\right)$ , where  $\widehat{B}_{\mathcal{S}_B}$  denotes the LS shrinkage estimator of the nonzero matrices in  $B_o$ . Let  $I_{\mathcal{S}_B} = \text{diag}(I_{1,m}, \dots, I_{d_{\mathcal{S}_B},m})$  where the  $I_{j,m}$  ( $j = 1, \dots, d_{\mathcal{S}_B}$ ) are  $m \times m$  identity matrices and  $d_{\mathcal{S}_B}$  is the dimensionality of the index set  $\mathcal{S}_B$ . Define

$$Q_S \equiv \begin{pmatrix} \beta'_o & 0 \\ 0 & I_{\mathcal{S}_B} \\ \alpha'_{o,\perp} & 0 \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } D_{n,S} \equiv \text{diag}(n^{-\frac{1}{2}}I_{r_o}, n^{-\frac{1}{2}}I_{\mathcal{S}_B}, n^{-1}I_{m-r_o}),$$

where the identity matrix  $I_{\mathcal{S}_B} = I_{md_{\mathcal{S}_B}}$  in  $Q_S$  serves to accommodate the nonzero matrices in  $B_o$ . Let  $\Delta X_{\mathcal{S},t}$  denote the nonzero lagged differences in (5.1), then the true model can be written as

$$\Delta Y_t = \Pi_o Y_{t-1} + B_{o,\mathcal{S}_B} \Delta X_{\mathcal{S},t-1} + u_t = \Theta_{o,S} Q_S^{-1} Z_{\mathcal{S},t-1} + u_t \quad (5.10)$$

where the transformed and reduced regressor variables are

$$Z_{\mathcal{S},t-1} = Q_S \begin{bmatrix} Y_{t-1} \\ \Delta X_{\mathcal{S},t-1} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} Z_{3\mathcal{S},t-1} \\ Z_{2,t-1} \end{bmatrix},$$

with  $Z'_{3\mathcal{S},t-1} = \begin{bmatrix} Y'_{t-1}\beta_o & \Delta X'_{\mathcal{S},t-1} \end{bmatrix}$  and  $Z_{2,t-1} = \alpha'_{o,\perp} Y_{t-1}$ . From Lemma 10.5, we obtain

$$n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{3\mathcal{S},t-1} Z'_{3\mathcal{S},t-1} \rightarrow_p E [Z_{3\mathcal{S},t-1} Z'_{3\mathcal{S},t-1}] \equiv \Sigma_{z_{3\mathcal{S}} z_{3\mathcal{S}}}.$$

The centred limit theory of  $\widehat{\Theta}_{\mathcal{S}}$  is given in the following result.

**Theorem 5.2** *Under conditions of Theorem 5.1, if  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}(\delta_{r,n} + \delta_{b,n}) = o_p(1)$ , then*

$$\left( \widehat{\Theta}_{\mathcal{S}} - \Theta_{o,\mathcal{S}} \right) Q_{\mathcal{S}}^{-1} D_{n,\mathcal{S}}^{-1} \rightarrow_d \left( B_{m,\mathcal{S}} \quad \alpha_o(\alpha'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o B_{m,2} \right), \quad (5.11)$$

where

$$B_{m,\mathcal{S}} \equiv N(0, \Omega_u \otimes \Sigma_{z_{3\mathcal{S}} z_{3\mathcal{S}}}^{-1}) \text{ and } B_{m,2} \equiv \int dB_u B'_{w_2} \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1}.$$

Theorem 5.2 extends the result of Theorem 3.5 to the general VEC model with lagged differences. From Theorem 5.2, the LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Theta}_{\mathcal{S}}$  is more efficient than the OLS estimator  $\widehat{\Theta}_n$  in the sense that: (i) the zero components in  $B_o$  are estimated as zeros w.p.a.1 and thus their LS shrinkage estimators are super efficient; (ii) under the consistent lagged differences selection, the true nonzero components in  $B_o$  are more efficiently estimated in the sense of smaller asymptotic variance; and (iii) the true cointegration rank is estimated and therefore when  $r_o < m$  some parts of the matrix  $\Pi_o$  are estimated at a rate faster than root- $n$ .

The LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  suffers from second order asymptotic bias, evident in the component  $B_{m,2}$  of the limit (5.11). As in the simpler model this asymptotic bias is eliminated by GLS estimation. Accordingly we define the GLS shrinkage estimator of the general model as

$$\begin{aligned} (\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}, \widehat{B}_{g,n}) = & \arg \min_{\Pi, B_1, \dots, B_p \in R^{m \times m}} \left\{ \sum_{t=1}^n \left\| \Delta Y_t - \Pi Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p B_j \Delta Y_{t-j} \right\|_{\widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1}}^2 \right. \\ & \left. + n \sum_{j=1}^p \lambda_{b,j,n} \|B_j\| + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi)\| \right\}. \quad (5.12) \end{aligned}$$

To conclude this section, we show that the GLS shrinkage estimator  $(\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}, \widehat{B}_{g,n})$  is oracle efficient in the sense that it has the same asymptotic distribution as the RRR estimate assuming the true cointegration rank and lagged differences are known.

**Corollary 5.3 (Oracle Properties of GLS)** *Suppose the conditions of Theorem 5.2 are satisfied. If  $\widehat{\Omega}_{u,n} \rightarrow_p \Omega_u$ , then*

$$\Pr\left(r(\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}) = r_o\right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ and } \Pr\left(\widehat{B}_{g,j,n} = 0\right) \rightarrow 1 \quad (5.13)$$

for  $j \in \mathcal{S}_B^c$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ ; moreover,  $\widehat{\Theta}_{\mathcal{S}}$  has the following limit distribution

$$\left(\widehat{\Theta}_{\mathcal{S}} - \Theta_{o,\mathcal{S}}\right) Q_{\mathcal{S}}^{-1} D_{n,\mathcal{S}}^{-1} \rightarrow_d \left( B_{m,\mathcal{S}} \quad \alpha_o(\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \int dB_{u \cdot w_2} B'_{w_2} (\int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2})^{-1} \right) \quad (5.14)$$

where  $B_{u \cdot w_2}$  is defined in Theorem 3.6.

Corollary 5.3 is proved using the same arguments of Corollary 3.6 and Theorem 5.2 and its proof is omitted.

**Remark 5.4** *Although the grouped Lasso penalty function  $P(B) = \|B\|$  is used in LS shrinkage estimation (5.2) and GLS shrinkage estimation (5.12), we remark that a full Lasso penalty function can also be used and the resulting GLS shrinkage estimate enjoys the same properties stated in Corollary 5.3. The GLS shrinkage estimation using the (full) Lasso penalty takes the following form*

$$\begin{aligned} (\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}, \widehat{B}_{g,n}) = & \arg \min_{\Pi, B_1, \dots, B_p \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times m}} \left\{ \sum_{t=1}^n \left\| \Delta Y_t - \Pi Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p B_j \Delta Y_{t-j} \right\|_{\widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1}}^2 \right. \\ & \left. + n \sum_{j=1}^p \sum_{l=1}^m \sum_{s=1}^m \lambda_{b,j,l,s,n} |B_{j,ls}| + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi)\| \right\} \end{aligned} \quad (5.15)$$

where  $B_{j,ls}$  denotes the  $(l, s)$ th element of  $B_j$ . The advantage of the grouped Lasso penalty  $P(B)$  is that it shrinks elements in  $B$  to zero groupwisely, which makes it a natural choice for the lag order selection (as well as lag elimination) in VECM models. The Lasso penalty is more flexible and when used in shrinkage estimation, it can do more than select the zero matrices. It can also select the non-zero elements in the nonzero matrices  $B_{o,j}$  ( $j \in \mathcal{S}_B$ ) w.p.a.1.

**Remark 5.5** *The flexibility of the Lasso penalty enables GLS shrinkage estimation to achieve more goals in one-step, in addition to model selection and efficient estimation.*

Suppose that the vector  $Y_t$  can be divided in  $r$  and  $m - r$  dimensional subvectors  $Y_{1,t}$  and  $Y_{2,t}$ , then the VECM can be rewritten as

$$\begin{bmatrix} \Delta Y_{1,t} \\ \Delta Y_{2,t} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \Pi_o^{11} & \Pi_o^{12} \\ \Pi_o^{21} & \Pi_o^{22} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} Y_{1,t-1} \\ Y_{2,t-1} \end{bmatrix} + \sum_{j=1}^p \begin{bmatrix} B_{o,j}^{11} & B_{o,j}^{12} \\ B_{o,j}^{21} & B_{o,j}^{22} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \Delta Y_{1,t-j} \\ \Delta Y_{2,t-j} \end{bmatrix} + u_t, \quad (5.16)$$

where  $\Pi_o$  and  $B_{o,j}$  ( $j = 1, \dots, p$ ) are partitioned in line with  $Y_t$ . By definition,  $Y_{2,t}$  does not Granger-cause  $Y_{1,t}$  if and only if

$$\Pi_o^{12} = 0 \text{ and } B_{o,j}^{12} = 0 \text{ for any } j \in \mathcal{S}_B.$$

One can attach the (grouped) Lasso penalty of  $\Pi^{12}$  in (5.16) such that the causality test is automatically executed in GLS shrinkage estimation.

**Remark 5.6** In this paper, we only consider the Lasso penalty function in the LS or GLS shrinkage estimation. The main advantage of the Lasso penalty is that it is a convex function, which combines the convexity of the LS or GLS criterion, making the computation of the shrinkage estimate faster and more accurate. It is clear that as long as the tuning parameter satisfies certain rate requirements, our main results continue to hold if other penalty functions (e.g., the bridge penalty) are used in the LS or GLS shrinkage estimation.

## 6 Adaptive Selection of the Tuning Parameters

This section develops a data-driven procedure of selecting the tuning parameters  $\{\lambda_{r,k,n}\}_{k=1}^m$  and  $\{\lambda_{b,j,n}\}_{j=1}^p$ . As presented in previous sections, the conditions ensuring oracle properties in GLS shrinkage estimation require that the tuning parameters of the estimates of zero and nonzero components have different asymptotic behavior. For example, in Theorem 3.3, we need  $\lambda_{r,k,n} = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}})$  for any  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi$  and  $\lambda_{r,k,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$  for  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$ , which implies that some sort of known adaptive penalty should appear in  $\lambda_{r,k,n}$ . One popular choice of such a penalty is the adaptive Lasso penalty (c.f., Zou, 2006), which in our model can be defined as

$$\lambda_{r,k,n} = \frac{\lambda_{r,k,n}^*}{\|\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^\omega} \text{ and } \lambda_{b,j,n} = \frac{m^\omega \lambda_{b,j,n}^*}{\|\widehat{B}_{1st,j}\|^\omega} \quad (6.1)$$



where  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  and  $\lambda_{b,j,n}^*$  are non-increasing positive sequences and  $\omega$  is some positive finite constant.

The adaptive penalty in  $\lambda_{r,k,n}$  is  $\|\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^{-\omega}$  ( $k = 1, \dots, m$ ), because for any  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$ , there is  $\|\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^{-\omega} \rightarrow_p \infty$  and for any  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi$ , there is  $\|\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^{-\omega} \rightarrow_p \|\phi_k(\Pi_o)\|^{-\omega} = O(1)$  under Assumption WN<sup>3</sup>. Similarly, the adaptive penalty in  $\lambda_{b,j,n}$  is  $m^\omega \|\widehat{B}_{1st,j}\|^{-\omega}$ , where the extra term  $m^\omega$  is used to adjust the effect of dimensionality of  $B_j$  on the adaptive penalty. Such adjustment does not effect the asymptotic properties of the LS/GLS shrinkage estimation, but it is used to improve their finite sample performances. To see the effect of the dimensionality on the adaptive penalty, we write

$$\|\widehat{B}_{1st,j}\|^\omega = \left[ \sum_{l=1}^m \sum_{h=1}^m |\widehat{B}_{1st,j,lh}|^2 \right]^{\frac{\omega}{2}}.$$

Although each individual  $|\widehat{B}_{1st,j,lh}|^2$  may be close to zero,  $\|\widehat{B}_{1st,j}\|^2$  could be large in magnitude in finite samples because it is the sum of  $m^2$  such terms (i.e.  $|\widehat{B}_{1st,j,lh}|^2$ ). As a result, the adaptive penalty  $\|\widehat{B}_{1st,j}\|^{-\omega}$  without any adjustment tends to be smaller than the value it should be. One straightforward adjustment for the dimensionality effect is to use the average, instead of the sum, of the square terms  $|\widehat{B}_{1st,j,lh}|^2$ , i.e.

$$\left[ m^{-2} \sum_{l=1}^m \sum_{h=1}^m |\widehat{B}_{1st,j,lh}|^2 \right]^{\frac{\omega}{2}} = m^{-\omega} \|\widehat{B}_{1st,j}\|^\omega$$

in the adaptive penalty. Under some general rate conditions on  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  and  $\lambda_{b,j,n}^*$ , the following lemma shows that the tuning parameters specified in (6.1) satisfy the conditions in our theorems of super efficiency and oracle properties.

**Lemma 6.1** (i) If  $n^{\frac{1}{2}} \lambda_{r,k,n}^* = o(1)$  and  $n^\omega \lambda_{r,k,n}^* \rightarrow \infty$ , then under Assumptions WN and RR we have

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}} \delta_{r,n} = o_p(1) \text{ and } \lambda_{r,k,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$$

for any  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$ ; (ii) if  $n^{\frac{1+\omega}{2}} \lambda_{r,k,n}^* = o(1)$  and  $n^\omega \lambda_{r,k,n}^* \rightarrow \infty$ , then under Assumptions LP and RR

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\delta}_{r,n} = o_p(1), \quad n^{\frac{1}{2}} \lambda_{r,k,n} = o_p(1) \text{ and } \lambda_{r,k',n} \rightarrow_p \infty$$

for any  $k \in \{r_1 + 1, \dots, r_o\}$  and  $k' \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$ ; (iii) if  $n^{\frac{1}{2}} \lambda_{r,k,n}^* = o(1)$  and  $n^\omega \lambda_{r,k,n}^* \rightarrow \infty$  for

---

<sup>3</sup>The same intuition applies to the scenario where Assumption LP holds.

any  $k = 1, \dots, m$ , and  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\lambda_{b,j,n}^* = o(1)$  and  $n^{\frac{1+\omega}{2}}\lambda_{b,j,n}^* \rightarrow \infty$  for any  $j = 1, \dots, p$ , then under Assumptions WN and GRR

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}}(\delta_{r,n} + \delta_{b,n}) = o_p(1), \lambda_{r,k,n} \rightarrow_p \infty \text{ and } \lambda_{b,j,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$$

for any  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$  and  $j \in \mathcal{S}_B^c$ .

It is notable that, when  $u_t$  is *iid*,  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  is required to converge to zero with the rate faster than  $n^{-\frac{1}{2}}$ , while when  $u_t$  is weakly dependent,  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  has to converge to zero with the rate faster than  $n^{-\frac{1+\omega}{2}}$ . The convergence rate of  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  in Lemma 6.1.(ii) is faster to ensure that the pseudo  $r_o - r_1$  zero eigenvalues in  $\Pi_1$  are estimated as non-zeros w.p.a.1. When  $r_1 = r_o$ ,  $\Pi_1$  contains no pseudo zero eigenvalues and it has the true rank  $r_o$ . It is clear that in this case, we only need  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\lambda_{r,k,n}^* = o(1)$  and  $n^\omega\lambda_{r,k,n}^* \rightarrow \infty$  to show that the tuning parameters in (6.1) satisfy  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\delta_{r,n} = o_p(1)$  and  $\lambda_{r,k',n} \rightarrow_p \infty$  for any  $k' \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$ .

From Lemma 6.1, we see that the conditions imposed on  $\{\lambda_{r,k,n}^*\}_{k=1}^m$  and  $\{\lambda_{b,j,n}^*\}_{j=1}^p$  to ensure oracle properties in GLS shrinkage estimation only restrict the rates at which the sequences  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  and  $\lambda_{b,j,n}^*$  go to zero. But in finite samples these conditions are not precise enough to provide a clear choice of tuning parameter for practical implementation. On one hand these sequences should converge to zero as fast as possible so that shrinkage bias in the estimation of the nonzero components of the model is as small as possible. In the extreme case where  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^* = 0$  and  $\lambda_{b,j,n}^* = 0$ , LS shrinkage estimation reduces to LS estimation and there is no shrinkage bias in the resulting estimators. (Of course there may still be finite sample estimation bias). On the other hand, these sequences should converge to zero as slow as possible so that in finite samples zero components in the model are estimated as zeros with higher probability. In the opposite extremity  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^* = \infty$  and  $\lambda_{b,j,n}^* = \infty$ , and then all parameters of the model are estimated as zeros with probability one in finite samples. Thus there is bias and variance trade-off in the selection of the sequences in  $\{\lambda_{r,k,n}^*\}_{k=1}^m$  and  $\{\lambda_{b,j,n}^*\}_{j=1}^p$ .

By definition  $\widehat{T}_n = Q_n \widehat{\Pi}_n$  and the  $k$ -th row of  $\widehat{T}_n$  is estimated as zero only if the following first order condition holds

$$\left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n Q_n(k) \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1} (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j}) Y_{t-1}' \right\| < \frac{\lambda_{r,k,n}^*}{2 \|\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^\omega}. \quad (6.2)$$

Let  $T \equiv Q\Pi_o$  and  $T(k)$  be the  $k$ -th row of the matrix  $Q\Pi_o$ . If a nonzero  $T(k)$  ( $k \leq r_o$ ) is

estimated as zero, then the left hand side of the above inequality will be asymptotically close to a nonzero real number because the under-selected cointegration rank leads to inconsistent estimation. To ensure the shrinkage bias and errors of under-selecting the cointegration rank are small in finite samples, one would like to have  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  converge to zero as fast as possible.

On the other hand, the zero rows of  $T$  are estimated as zero only if the same inequality in (6.2) is satisfied. As  $n\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}) = O_p(1)$ , we can rewrite the inequality in (6.2) as

$$\left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n Q_n(k) \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1} (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j}) Y'_{t-1} \right\| < \frac{n^\omega \lambda_{r,k,n}^*}{2 \|n\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^\omega}. \quad (6.3)$$

The sample average in the left side of this inequality is asymptotically a vector of linear combinations of non-degenerate random variables, and it is desirable to have  $n^\omega \lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  diverge to infinity as fast as possible to ensure that the true cointegration rank is selected with high probability in finite samples. We propose to choose  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^* = c_{r,k} n^{-\frac{\omega}{2}}$  (here  $c_{r,k}$  is some positive constant whose selection is discussed later) to balance the requirement that  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  converges to zero and  $n^\omega \lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  diverges to infinity as fast as possible.

Using similar arguments we see that the component  $B_{o,j}$  in  $B_o$  will be estimated as zero if the following condition holds

$$\left\| n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1} (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j}) \Delta Y'_{t-j} \right\| < \frac{n^{\frac{1}{2}} \lambda_{b,j,n}^*}{2 \|\widehat{B}_{1st,j}\|^\omega}. \quad (6.4)$$

As  $B_{o,j} \neq 0$ , the left side of the above inequality will be asymptotically close to a nonzero real number because the under-selected lagged differences also lead to inconsistent estimation. To ensure the shrinkage bias and error of under-selection of the lagged differences are small in the finite samples, it is desirable to have  $n^{\frac{1}{2}} \lambda_{b,j,n}^*$  converge to zero as fast as possible.

On the other hand, the zero component  $B_{o,j}$  in  $B_o$  is estimated as zero only if the same inequality in (6.4) is satisfied. As  $\widehat{B}_{1st,j} = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}})$  the inequality in (6.4) can be written as

$$\left\| n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1} (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j}) \Delta Y'_{t-j} \right\| < \frac{n^{\frac{1+\omega}{2}} \lambda_{b,j,n}^*}{2 \|n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widehat{B}_{1st,j}\|^\omega}. \quad (6.5)$$

The sample average on the left side of this inequality is asymptotically a vector of lin-

ear combinations of non-degenerated random variables, and again it is desirable to have  $n^{\frac{1+\omega}{2}} \lambda_{b,j,n}^*$  diverge to infinity as fast as possible to ensure that zero components in  $B_o$  are selected with high probability in finite samples. We propose to choose  $\lambda_{b,j,n}^* = c_{b,j} n^{-\frac{1}{2} - \frac{\omega}{4}}$  (again  $c_{b,j}$  is some positive constant whose selection is discussed later) to balance the requirement that  $\lambda_{b,j,n}^*$  converges to zero and  $n^{\frac{1+\omega}{2}} \lambda_{b,j,n}^*$  diverges to infinity as fast as possible.

We next discuss how to choose the loading coefficients in  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^*$  and  $\lambda_{b,j,n}^*$ . Note that the sample average on the left hand side of (6.3) can be written as

$$F_{\pi,n}(k) \equiv \frac{Q_n(k) \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1}}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t - (\widehat{\Theta}_n - \Theta_o) Q_B^{-1} Z_{t-1}] Y'_{t-1}.$$

Similarly, the sample average on the left hand side of (6.5) can be written as

$$F_{b,n}(j) \equiv \frac{\widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1}}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t - (\widehat{\Theta}_n - \Theta_o) Q_B^{-1} Z_{t-1}] \Delta Y'_{t-j}.$$

The next lemma provides the asymptotic distributions of  $F_{\pi,n}(k)$  and  $F_{b,n}(j)$  for  $k = 1, \dots, m$  and  $j = 1, \dots, p$ .

**Lemma 6.2** *Suppose that the conditions of Corollary 5.3 are satisfied, then*

$$F_{\pi,n}(k) = Q_n(k) T_{1,\pi_o} \int dB_u B'_u T_{2,\pi_o} + o_p(1) \quad (6.6)$$

for  $k = 1, \dots, m$ , where

$$T_{1,\pi_o} = \Omega_u^{-1} - \Omega_u^{-1} \alpha_o (\alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} \quad \text{and} \quad T_{2,\pi_o} = \alpha_{o,\perp} (\beta'_{o,\perp} \alpha_{o,\perp})^{-1} \beta'_{o,\perp};$$

further, for  $j = 1, \dots, p$ ,

$$F_{b,n}(j) \rightarrow_d \Omega_u^{-\frac{1}{2}} B_{m \times m}(1) \Sigma_{\Delta y_j | z_{3S}}^{\frac{1}{2}} \quad (6.7)$$

where  $B_{m,m} = N(0, I_m \otimes I_m)$ ,

$$\Sigma_{\Delta y_j | z_{3S}} = E [(\Delta Y_{t-j} | Z_{3S}) (\Delta Y'_{t-j} | Z_{3S})] \quad \text{and} \quad \Delta Y_{t-j} | Z_{3S} = \Delta Y_{t-j} - \Sigma_{\Delta y_j | z_{3S}} \Sigma_{z_{3S} z_{3S}}^{-1} Z_{3S,t-1}.$$

We propose to select  $c_{r,k}$  to normalize the random sum in (6.6), i.e.

$$\widehat{c}_{r,k} = 2 \left\| Q_n(k) \widehat{T}_{1,\pi} \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{1/2} \right\| \times \left\| \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{1/2} \widehat{T}_{2,\pi} \right\| \quad (6.8)$$

where  $\widehat{T}_{1,\pi}$  and  $\widehat{T}_{2,\pi}$  are some estimates of  $T_{1,\pi_o}$  and  $T_{2,\pi_o}$ . Of course, the rank of  $\Pi_o$  needs to be estimated before  $T_{1,\pi_o}$  and  $T_{2,\pi_o}$  can be estimated. We propose to run a first step shrinkage estimation with  $\lambda_{r,k,n}^* = 2 \log(n)n^{-\frac{\omega}{2}}$  and  $\lambda_{b,j,n}^* = 2 \log(n)n^{-\frac{1}{2}-\frac{\omega}{4}}$  to get initial estimates of the rank  $r_o$  and the order of the lagged differences. Then, based on this first-step shrinkage estimation, one can construct  $\widehat{T}_{1,\pi}$ ,  $\widehat{T}_{2,\pi}$  and thus the empirical loading coefficient  $\widehat{c}_{r,k}$ . Similarly, We propose to select  $c_b$  to normalize the random sum in (6.6), i.e.

$$\widehat{c}_{b,j} = 2 \left\| \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1/2} \right\| \times \left\| \widehat{\Sigma}_{\Delta y_j \Delta y_j}^{\frac{1}{2}} \right\|, \quad (6.9)$$

where  $\widehat{\Sigma}_{\Delta y_j \Delta y_j} = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \Delta Y_{t-j} \Delta Y_{t-j}'$ . From the expression in (6.7), it seems that the empirical analog of  $\Sigma_{\Delta y_j | z_{3S}}$  is a more appropriate term to normalize  $F_{b,n}(j)$ . However, if  $\Delta Y_{t-j}$  is a redundant lag and the residual of its projection on  $\beta_o' Y_{t-1}$  and non-redundant lagged differences is close to zero, then  $\Sigma_{\Delta y_j | z_{3S}}$  and its estimate will be close to zero. As a result,  $\widehat{c}_{b,j}$  tends to be small, which will increase the probability of including  $\Delta Y_{t-j}$  in the selected model with higher probability in finite samples. To avoid such unappealing scenario, we use  $\widehat{\Sigma}_{\Delta y_j \Delta y_j}$  instead of the empirical analog of  $\Sigma_{\Delta y_j | z_{3S}}$  in (6.9). It is clear that  $\widehat{c}_{b,j}$  can be directly constructed from the preliminary LS estimation.

The choice of  $\omega$  is a more complicated issue which is not pursued in this paper. For the empirical applications, we propose to choose  $\omega = 2$  because such a choice is popular in the Lasso-based variable selection literature, it satisfies all our rate criteria, and simulations show that the choice works remarkably well. Based on all the above results, we propose the following data dependent tuning parameters for LS shrinkage estimation:

$$\lambda_{r,k,n} = \frac{2}{n} \left\| Q_n(k) \widehat{T}_{1,\pi} \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{1/2} \right\| \times \left\| \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{1/2} \widehat{T}_{2,\pi} \right\| \times \|\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^{-2} \quad (6.10)$$

and

$$\lambda_{b,j,n} = \frac{2m^2}{n} \left\| \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1/2} \right\| \times \left\| \widehat{\Sigma}_{\Delta y_j \Delta y_j}^{\frac{1}{2}} \right\| \times \|\widehat{B}_{1st,j}\|^{-2} \quad (6.11)$$

for  $k = 1, \dots, m$  and  $j = 1, \dots, p$ . The above discussion is based on the general VECM with *iid*  $u_t$ . In the simple ECM where the cointegration rank selection is the only concern, the adaptive tuning parameters proposed in (6.10) are still valid. The expression in (6.10) will be invalid when  $u_t$  is weakly dependent and  $r_1 < r_o$ . In that case, we propose to replace the leading term  $2n^{-1}$  in (6.10) by  $2n^{-3/2}$ .

## 7 Simulation Study

We conducted simulations to assess the finite sample performance of the shrinkage estimates in terms of cointegrating rank selection and efficient estimation. Three models were investigated. In the first model, the simulated data are generated from

$$\begin{pmatrix} \Delta Y_{1,t} \\ \Delta Y_{2,t} \end{pmatrix} = \Pi_o \begin{pmatrix} Y_{1,t-1} \\ Y_{2,t-1} \end{pmatrix} + \begin{pmatrix} u_{1,t} \\ u_{2,t} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (7.1)$$

where  $u_t \equiv iid N(0, \Omega_u)$  with  $\Omega_u = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0.5 \\ 0.5 & 0.75 \end{pmatrix}$ . The initial observation  $Y_0$  is set to be zero for simplicity.  $\Pi_o$  is specified as follows

$$\begin{pmatrix} \pi_{11,o} & \pi_{12,o} \\ \pi_{21,o} & \pi_{22,o} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} -1 & -0.5 \\ 1 & 0.5 \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } \begin{pmatrix} -0.5 & 0.1 \\ 0.2 & -0.4 \end{pmatrix} \quad (7.2)$$

to allow for the cointegration rank to be 0, 1 and 2 respectively.

In the second model, the simulated data  $\{Y_t\}_{t=1}^n$  are generated from equation (7.1)-(7.2), while the innovation term  $u_t$  is generated by

$$\begin{pmatrix} u_{1,t} \\ u_{2,t} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0.5 \\ 0.5 & 0.75 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} u_{1,t-1} \\ u_{2,t-1} \end{pmatrix} + \begin{pmatrix} \varepsilon_{1,t} \\ \varepsilon_{2,t} \end{pmatrix},$$

where  $\varepsilon_t \equiv iid N(0, \Omega_\varepsilon)$  with  $\Omega_\varepsilon = diag(1.25, 0.75)$ . The initial values  $Y_0$  and  $\varepsilon_0$  are set to be zero.

The third model has the following form

$$\begin{pmatrix} \Delta Y_{1,t} \\ \Delta Y_{2,t} \end{pmatrix} = \Pi_o \begin{pmatrix} Y_{1,t-1} \\ Y_{2,t-1} \end{pmatrix} + B_{1,o} \begin{pmatrix} \Delta Y_{1,t-1} \\ \Delta Y_{2,t-1} \end{pmatrix} + B_{3,o} \begin{pmatrix} \Delta Y_{1,t-3} \\ \Delta Y_{2,t-3} \end{pmatrix} + u_t, \quad (7.3)$$

where  $u_t$  is generated under the same condition in (7.1),  $\Pi_o$  is specified similarly in (7.2),  $B_{2,o}$  is taken to be  $diag(0.4, 0.4)$  such that Assumption 5.1 is satisfied. The initial values  $(Y_t, \varepsilon_t)$  ( $t = -3, \dots, 0$ ) are set to be zero. In the above three cases, we include 50 additional observations to the simulated sample with sample size  $n$  to eliminate start-up effects from the initialization.

In the first two models, we assume that the econometrician specifies the following model

$$\begin{pmatrix} \Delta Y_{1,t} \\ \Delta Y_{2,t} \end{pmatrix} = \Pi_o \begin{pmatrix} Y_{1,t-1} \\ Y_{2,t-1} \end{pmatrix} + u_t, \quad (7.4)$$

where  $u_t$  is  $iid(0, \Omega_u)$  with some unknown positive definite matrix  $\Omega_u$ . The above empirical model is correctly specified under the data generating assumption (7.1), but is misspecified under (7.2). We are interested in investigating the performance of the shrinkage method in selecting the correct rank of  $\Pi_o$  under both data generating assumptions and efficient estimation of  $\Pi_o$  under Assumption (7.1).

In the third model, we assume that the econometrician specifies the following model

$$\begin{pmatrix} \Delta Y_{1,t} \\ \Delta Y_{2,t} \end{pmatrix} = \Pi_o \begin{pmatrix} Y_{1,t-1} \\ Y_{2,t-1} \end{pmatrix} + \sum_{j=1}^3 B_{j,o} \begin{pmatrix} \Delta Y_{1,t-j} \\ \Delta Y_{2,t-j} \end{pmatrix} + u_t, \quad (7.5)$$

where  $u_t$  is  $iid(0, \Omega_u)$  with some unknown positive definite matrix  $\Omega_u$ . The above empirical model is over-parameterized according to (7.3). We are interested in investigating the performance of the shrinkage method in selecting the correct rank of  $\Pi_o$  and the order of the lagged differences, and efficient estimation of  $\Pi_o$  and  $B_{2,o}$ .

Table 11.1 presents finite sample probabilities of rank selection under different model specifications. Overall, the GLS shrinkage method performs very well in selecting the true rank of  $\Pi_o$ . When the sample size is small (i.e.  $n = 100$ ) and the data are *iid*, the probability of selecting the true rank  $r_o = 0$  is close to 1 (around 0.96) and the probabilities of selecting the true ranks  $r_o = 1$  and  $r_o = 2$  are almost equal to 1. When the sample size is increased to 400, the probability of selecting the true ranks  $r_o = 0$  and  $r_o = 1$  are almost equal to 1 and the probability of selecting the true rank  $r_o = 2$  equals 1. Similar results show up when the data are weakly dependent (model 2). The only difference is that when the pseudo true eigenvalues are close to zero, the probability of falsely selecting these small eigenvalues is increased, as illustrated in the weakly dependent case with  $r_o = 2$ . However, as the sample size grows, the probability of selecting the true rank moves closer to 1.

Tables 11.3, 11.4 and 11.5 provide finite sample properties of the GLS shrinkage estimate, the OLS estimate and the oracle estimate (under the first simulation design) in terms of bias, standard deviation and root of mean square error. When the true rank  $r_o = 0$ , the unknown parameter  $\Pi_o$  is a zero matrix. In this case, the GLS shrinkage estimate clearly dominates the LS estimate due to the high probability of the shrinkage method selecting

the true rank. When the true rank  $r_o = 1$ , we do not observe an efficiency advantage of the GLS shrinkage estimator over the LS estimate, but the finite sample bias of the shrinkage estimate is remarkably smaller (Table 11.4). From Corollary 3.6, we see that the GLS shrinkage estimator is free of high order bias, which explains its smaller bias in finite samples. Moreover, Lemma 10.2 and Corollary 3.6 indicate that the OLS estimator and the GLS shrinkage estimator (and hence the oracle estimator) have almost the same variance. This explains the phenomenon that the GLS shrinkage estimate does not look more efficient than the OLS estimate. To better compare the OLS estimate, the GLS shrinkage estimate and the oracle estimate, we transform the three estimates using the matrix  $Q$  and its inverse (i.e. the estimate  $\hat{\Pi}$  is transformed to  $Q\hat{\Pi}Q^{-1}$ ). Note that in this case,  $Q\Pi_oQ^{-1} = \text{diag}(-0.5, 0)$ . The finite sample properties of the transformed estimates are presented in the last two panels of Table 11.4. We see that the elements in the last column of the transformed GLS shrinkage estimator enjoys very small bias and small variance even when the sample size is only 100. The elements in the last column of the OLS estimator, when compared with the elements in its first column, have smaller variance but larger bias. It is clear that as the sample size grows, the GLS shrinkage estimator approaches the oracle estimator in terms of overall performance. When the true rank  $r_o = 2$ , the LS estimator is better than the shrinkage estimator as the latter suffers from shrinkage bias in finite samples. If shrinkage bias is a concern, one can run a reduced rank regression based on the rank selected by the GLS shrinkage estimation to get the so called post-Lasso estimator. The post-Lasso estimator also enjoys oracle properties and it is free of shrinkage bias in finite samples.

Table 11.2 shows finite sample performance probabilities of the new shrinkage method in joint rank and lag order selection for model 3. Evidently, the method performs very well in selecting the true rank and true lagged differences (and thus the true model) in all scenarios. It is interesting to see that the probabilities of selecting the true ranks are not negatively affected either by adding lags to the model or by the lagged order selection being simultaneously performed with rank selection. Tables 11.6, 11.7 and 11.8 present the finite sample properties of GLS shrinkage, OLS, and oracle estimation. When compared with the oracle estimates, some components in the GLS shrinkage estimate even have smaller variances, though their finite sample biases are slightly larger. As a result, their root mean square errors are smaller than these of their counterparts in oracle estimation. Moreover, the GLS shrinkage estimate generally has smaller variance when compared with the OLS estimate, though the finite sample bias of the shrinkage estimate of nonzero component is



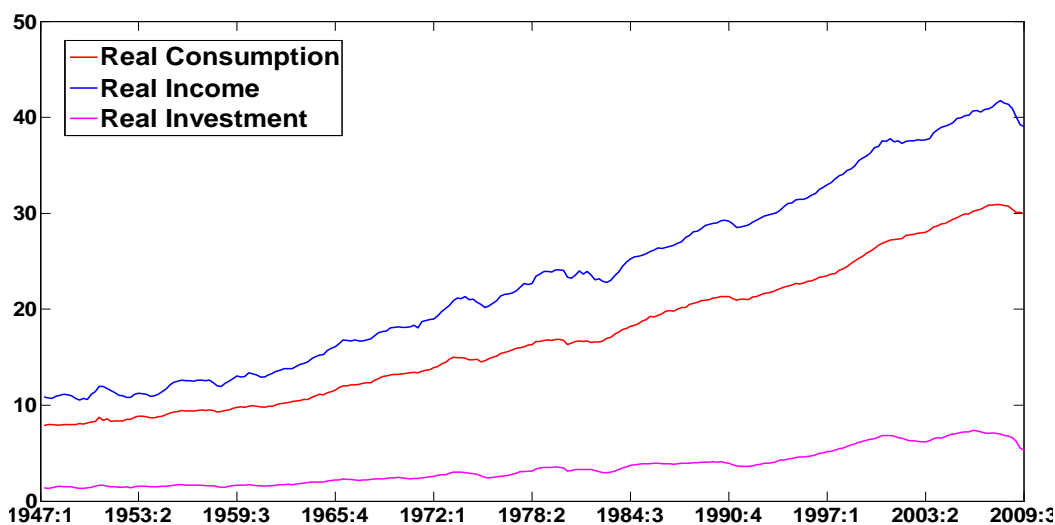


Figure 8.1: US GNP, Consumption and Investment. Data Source: Sources: Federal Reserve Economic Data (FRED) St. Louis Fed

slightly larger, as expected. The intuition that explains how the GLS shrinkage estimate can outperform the oracle estimate lies in the fact that there are some zero components in  $B_o$  and shrinking their estimates towards zero (but not exactly to zero) helps to reduce their bias and variance. From this perspective, the shrinkage estimates of the zero components in  $B_o$  share features similar to traditional shrinkage estimates, revealing that finite sample shrinkage bias is not always harmful

## 8 An Empirical Example

This section reports an empirical example to illustrate the application of these techniques to time series modeling of long-run and short-run behavior of aggregate income, consumption and investment in the US economy. The sample<sup>4</sup> used in the empirical study is quarterly data over the period 1947-2009 from the *Federal Reserve Economic Data (FRED)*.

The sample data are shown in Figure 8.1. Evidently, the time series display long-term trend growth, which is especially clear in GNP and consumption, and some commonality in the growth mechanism over time. In particular, the series show evidence of some co-

<sup>4</sup>We thank George Athanasopoulos for providing the data.

movement over the entire period. We therefore anticipate that modeling the series in terms of a VECM might reveal some non-trivial cointegrating relations. That is to say, we would expect cointegration rank  $r_o$  to satisfy  $0 < r_o < 3$ . These data were studied in Athanasopoulos et. al. (2011) who found on the same sample period and data that information criteria model selection produced a zero rank estimate for  $r_o$  and a single lag ( $\Delta Y_{t-1}$ ) in the ECM.

Let  $Y_t = (C_t, G_t, I_t)$ , where  $C_t$ ,  $G_t$  and  $I_t$  denote the logarithms of real consumption per capita, real GNP per capita and real investment per capita at period  $t$  respectively. For the same data as Athanasopoulos et. al. (2011) we applied our shrinkage methods to estimate the following system<sup>5</sup>

$$\Delta Y_t = \Pi Y_{t-1} + \sum_{k=1}^3 B_k \Delta Y_{t-k} + u_t. \quad (8.1)$$

Unrestricted LS estimation of this model produced eigenvalues 0.0025 and  $-0.0493 \pm 0.0119i$ , which indicates that  $\Pi$  might contain at least one zero eigenvalue as the positive eigenvalue estimates 0.0025 is close to zero. The LS estimates of the lag coefficients  $B_k$  are

$$\widehat{B}_{1,1st} = \begin{pmatrix} .14 & -.03 & .16 \\ .72 & -.18 & .97 \\ .19 & .02 & .35 \end{pmatrix}, \widehat{B}_{2,1st} = \begin{pmatrix} .33 & -.09 & .10 \\ .43 & -.06 & .23 \\ .16 & -.06 & .07 \end{pmatrix}, \widehat{B}_{3,1st} = \begin{pmatrix} .31 & -.20 & .24 \\ .19 & -.11 & -.15 \\ .09 & -.03 & .06 \end{pmatrix}.$$

From these estimates it is by no means clear which lagged differences should be ruled out from (8.1). From their magnitudes, it seems that  $\Delta Y_{t-1}$ ,  $\Delta Y_{t-2}$  and  $\Delta Y_{t-3}$  might all be included in the empirical model.

We applied LS shrinkage estimation to the model (8.1). Using the LS estimate, we constructed an adaptive penalty for GLS shrinkage estimation. We first tried GLS shrinkage estimation with tuning parameters

$$\lambda_{r,k,n} = \frac{2 \log(n)}{n} \|\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^{-2} \text{ and } \lambda_{b,j,n} = \frac{18 \log(n)}{n} \|\widehat{B}_{j,1st}\|^{-2}$$

---

<sup>5</sup>The system (8.1) was fitted with and without an intercept. The findings were very similar and in both cases cointegrating rank was found to be 2. Results are reported here for the fitted intercept case. Of course, Lasso methods can also be applied to determine whether an intercept should appear in each equation or in any long-run relation that might be found. That extension of Lasso is not considered in the present paper. It is likely to be important in forecasting.

for  $k, j = 1, 2, 3$ . The eigenvalues of the GLS shrinkage estimate of  $\Pi$  are 0.0000394, -0.0001912 and 0, which implies that  $\Pi$  contains one zero eigenvalue. There are two nonzero eigenvalue estimates which are both close to zero. The effect of the adaptive penalty on these two estimates is substantial because of the small magnitudes of the eigenvalues of the original LS estimate of  $\Pi$ . As a result, the shrinkage bias in the two nonzero eigenvalue estimates is likely to be large. The GLS shrinkage estimates of  $B_2$  and  $B_3$  are zero, while the GLS shrinkage estimate of  $B_1$  is

$$\widehat{B}_1 = \begin{pmatrix} .0687 & .1076 & .0513 \\ .4598 & .1212 & .4053 \\ .0986 & .1123 & .2322 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Using the results from the above GLS shrinkage estimation, we construct the adaptive loading parameters in (6.8) and (6.9). Using the adaptive tuning parameters in (6.10) and (6.11), we perform a further GLS shrinkage estimation of the empirical model (8.1). The eigenvalues of the new GLS shrinkage estimate of  $\Pi$  are  $-0.0226 \pm 0.0158i$  and 0, which again imply that  $\Pi$  contains one zero eigenvalue. Of course, the new nonzero eigenvalue estimates also contains nontrivial shrinkage bias. The new GLS shrinkage estimates of  $B_2$  and  $B_3$  are zero, but the estimate of  $B_1$  becomes

$$\widehat{B}_1 = \begin{pmatrix} .0681 & .1100 & .0115 \\ .4288 & .1472 & .4164 \\ .1054 & .1136 & .1919 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Finally, we run a post-Lasso RRR estimation based on the cointegration rank and lagged difference selected in the above GLS shrinkage estimation. The RRR estimates are the following

$$\Delta Y_t = \begin{pmatrix} .026 & -.022 \\ .082 & -.026 \\ -.012 & .013 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} .822 & -.555 & -.128 \\ -.265 & .378 & -.887 \end{pmatrix} Y_{t-1} + \begin{pmatrix} .127 & .028 & .312 \\ .598 & -.088 & 1.098 \\ .161 & .055 & .364 \end{pmatrix} \Delta Y_{t-1} + \widehat{u}_t$$

where the eigenvalues of the RRR estimate of  $\Pi$  are -0.0262, -0.0039 and 0. To sum up, this empirical implementation of our approach estimates cointegrating rank  $r_o$  to be 2 and selects one lagged difference in the ECM (8.1). These results corroborate the manifestation

of co-movement in the three time series  $G_t$ ,  $C_t$  and  $I_t$  through the presence of two cointegrating vectors in the fitted model, whereas traditional information criteria fail to find any co-movement in the data and set cointegrating rank to be zero.

## 9 Conclusion

One of the main challenges in any applied econometric work is the selection of a good model for practical implementation. The conduct of inference and model use in forecasting and policy analysis are inevitably conditioned on the empirical process of model selection, which typically leads to issues of post-model selection inference. Adaptive lasso and bridge estimation methods provide a methodology where these difficulties may be partly attenuated by simultaneous model selection and estimation to facilitate empirical research in complex models like reduced rank regressions where many selection decisions need to be made to construct a satisfactory empirical model. On the other hand, as indicated in the Introduction, the methods certainly do not eliminate post-shrinkage selection inference issues in finite samples because the estimators carry the effects of the in-built selections.

This paper shows how to use the methodology of shrinkage in a multivariate system to develop an automated approach to cointegrated system modeling that enables simultaneous estimation of the cointegrating rank and autoregressive order in conjunction with oracle-like efficient estimation of the cointegrating matrix and the transient dynamics. As such the methods offer practical advantages to the empirical researcher by avoiding sequential techniques where cointegrating rank and transient dynamics are estimated prior to model fitting.

Various extensions of the methods developed here are possible. One rather obvious extension is to allow for parametric restrictions on the cointegrating matrix which may relate to theory-induced specifications. Lasso type procedures have so far been confined to parametric models, whereas cointegrated systems are often formulated with some non-parametric elements relating to unknown features of the model. A second extension of the present methodology, therefore, is to semiparametric formulations in which the error process in the VECM is weakly dependent, which is partly considered already in Section 4. The effects of post-shrinkage inference issues also merit detailed investigation. These matters and other generalizations of the framework will be explored in future work.

## 10 Appendix

We start with some standard preliminary results and then prove the main results in each of the sections of the paper in turn, together with various lemmas that are useful in those derivations.

### 10.1 Some Auxiliary Results

Denote

$$\begin{aligned}\widehat{S}_{12} &= \sum_{t=1}^n \frac{Z_{1,t-1}Z'_{2,t-1}}{n}, \quad S_{21} = \sum_{t=1}^n \frac{Z_{2,t-1}Z'_{1,t-1}}{n}, \\ \widehat{S}_{11} &= \sum_{t=1}^n \frac{Z_{1,t-1}Z'_{1,t-1}}{n} \quad \text{and} \quad \widehat{S}_{22} = \sum_{t=1}^n \frac{Z_{2,t-1}Z'_{2,t-1}}{n}.\end{aligned}$$

The following lemma is standard and useful.

**Lemma 10.1** *Under Assumptions 3.1 and 3.2, we have*

- (a)  $\widehat{S}_{11} \rightarrow_p \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}$ ;
- (b)  $\widehat{S}_{21} \rightarrow_d -\int B_{w_2} dB'_{w_1} (\alpha'_o \beta_o)^{-1} + \Gamma_{w_2 z_1}$ ;
- (c)  $n^{-1} \widehat{S}_{22} \rightarrow_d \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2}$ ;
- (d)  $n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{1,t-1} \rightarrow_d N(0, \Omega_u \otimes \Sigma_{z_1 z_1})$ ;
- (e)  $n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{2,t-1} \rightarrow_d \left( \int B_{w_2} dB'_u \right)'$ .

*The quantities in (b), (c), (d), and (e) converge jointly.*

**Proof of Lemma 10.1.** See Johansen (1995) and Cheng and Phillips (2009). ■

### 10.2 Proof of Main Results in Section 3

The asymptotic properties of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  and its eigenvalues are described in the following result.

**Lemma 10.2** *Under Assumptions 3.1 and 3.2, we have:*

- (a) *recall  $D_n = \text{diag}(n^{-\frac{1}{2}} I_{r_o}, n^{-1} I_{m-r_o})$ , then  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  satisfies*

$$\left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \rightarrow_d (B_{m,1}, B_{m,2}) \quad (10.1)$$

*where  $B_{m,1}$  and  $B_{m,2}$  are defined in Theorem 3.5;*

- (b) the eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  satisfy  $\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}) \rightarrow_p \phi_k(\Pi_o)$  for  $k = 1, \dots, m$ ;  
(c) the last  $m - r_o$  eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  satisfy

$$n \left( \phi_1(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}), \dots, \phi_{m-r_o}(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}) \right) \rightarrow_d \left( \tilde{\phi}_{o,1}, \dots, \tilde{\phi}_{o,m-r_o} \right), \quad (10.2)$$

where the  $\tilde{\phi}_{o,j}$  ( $j = 1, \dots, m - r_o$ ) are solutions of the following determinantal equation

$$\left| \mu I_{m-r_o} - \left( \int dB_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right) \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} \right| = 0. \quad (10.3)$$

**Proof of Lemma 10.2.** (a) From (3.7)

$$\begin{aligned} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} &= \left( \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y'_{t-1} Q' \right) \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Q Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} Q' \right)^{-1} D_n^{-1} \\ &= \left( \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} D_n \right) \left( D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n \right)^{-1}. \end{aligned} \quad (10.4)$$

Result (a) follows directly from Lemma 10.1.

(b) This result follows directly by (a) and the continuous mapping theorem (CMT).

(c) Let  $\mu_k^* = n\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})$  ( $k = r_o + 1, \dots, m$ ), so that  $\mu_k^*$  is by definition a solution of the equation

$$0 = \left| \beta'_o S_n(\mu) \beta_o \right| \times \left| \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ S_n(\mu) - S_n(\mu) \beta_o \left[ \beta'_o S_n(\mu) \beta_o \right]^{-1} \beta'_o S_n(\mu) \right] \beta_{o\perp} \right|, \quad (10.5)$$

where  $S_n(\mu) = \frac{\mu}{n} I_m - \widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ .

For any compact subset  $K \subset R$ , we can invoke the results in (a) to show

$$\beta'_o S_n(\mu) \beta_o = \frac{\mu}{n} \beta'_o \beta_o - \beta'_o \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) \beta_o + \beta'_o \Pi_o \beta_o \rightarrow_p \beta'_o \Pi_o \beta_o, \quad (10.6)$$

uniformly over  $K$ . From Assumption 3.2.(iii), we have

$$\left| \beta'_o \Pi_o \beta_o \right| = \left| \beta'_o \alpha_o \beta'_o \beta_o \right| = \left| \beta'_o \alpha_o \right| \times \left| \beta'_o \beta_o \right| \neq 0.$$

Thus, the normalized  $m - r_o$  smallest eigenvalues  $\mu_k^*$  ( $k = r_o + 1, \dots, m$ ) of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  are asymptotically the solutions of the following determinantal equation,

$$0 = \left| \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ S_n(\mu) - S_n(\mu) \beta_o [\beta'_o S_n(\mu) \beta_o]^{-1} \beta'_o S_n(\mu) \right] \beta_{o\perp} \right|, \quad (10.7)$$

where

$$\beta'_o S_n(\mu) \beta_{o\perp} = \beta'_o \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) \beta_{o\perp}, \quad (10.8)$$

$$\beta'_{o\perp} S_n(\mu) \beta_{o\perp} = \frac{\mu}{n} I_{m-r_o} - \beta'_{o\perp} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) \beta_{o\perp}, \quad (10.9)$$

$$\beta'_{o\perp} S_n(\mu) \beta_o = \beta'_{o\perp} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \beta_o \rightarrow_p \beta'_{o\perp} \alpha_o \beta'_o \beta_o. \quad (10.10)$$

Using the results in (10.6) and (10.8)-(10.10), we get

$$\begin{aligned} & \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ S_n(\mu) - S_n(\mu) \beta_o [\beta'_o S_n(\mu) \beta_o]^{-1} \beta'_o S_n(\mu) \right] \beta_{o\perp} \\ = & \frac{\mu}{n} I_{m-r_o} - \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ I_m - \alpha_o (\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \beta'_o + o_p(1) \right] \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) \beta_{o\perp}. \end{aligned} \quad (10.11)$$

Note that

$$\begin{aligned} n \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) \beta_{o\perp} &= \left[ \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \right] n D_n Q \beta_{o\perp} \\ &= \left( \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} D_n \right) \left( D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n \right)^{-1} \begin{pmatrix} 0 \\ \alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp} \end{pmatrix} \\ &= n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{2,t-1} \left( n^{-2} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{2,t-1} Z'_{2,t-1} \right)^{-1} \alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp} \\ &\rightarrow_d \left( \int B_{w_2} dB'_u \right)' \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} \alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp}. \end{aligned} \quad (10.12)$$

Using the results in (10.11), (10.12) and the equality (2.2), we deduce that

$$\begin{aligned} & n \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ I_m - \alpha_o (\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \beta'_o + o_p(1) \right] \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) \beta_{o\perp} \\ \rightarrow_d & \left( \alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp} \right)^{-1} \left( \int B_{w_2} dB'_{w_2} \right)' \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} \alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp} \end{aligned} \quad (10.13)$$

Then, from (10.7)-(10.13), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \left| n\beta'_{o\perp} \left\{ S_n(\mu) - S_n(\mu)\beta_o [\beta'_o S_n(\mu)\beta_o]^{-1} \beta'_o S_n(\mu) \right\} \beta_{o\perp} \right| \\ & \rightarrow_d \left| \mu I_{m-r_o} - \left( \int B_{w_2} dB'_{w_2} \right)' \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} \right|, \end{aligned} \quad (10.14)$$

uniformly over  $K$ . The result in (c) follows from (10.14) and by continuous mapping. ■

The results of Lemma 10.2 are useful because the OLS estimate  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  and the related eigenvalue estimates can be used to construct adaptive penalty in the tuning parameters. The convergence rates of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  and  $\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})$  are important for delivering consistent model selection and cointegrated rank selection.

Let  $P_n$  be the inverse of  $Q_n$ . We subdivide the matrices  $P_n$  and  $Q_n$  as  $P_n = [P_{\alpha,n}, P_{\alpha\perp,n}]$  and  $Q'_n = [Q'_{\alpha,n}, Q'_{\alpha\perp,n}]$ , where  $Q_{\alpha,n}$  and  $P_{\alpha,n}$  are the first  $r_o$  rows of  $Q_n$  and first  $r_o$  columns of  $P_n$  respectively ( $Q_{\alpha\perp,n}$  and  $P_{\alpha\perp,n}$  are defined accordingly). By definition,

$$Q_{\alpha\perp,n}P_{\alpha\perp,n} = I_{m-r_o}, \quad Q_{\alpha,n}P_{\alpha\perp,n} = \mathbf{0}_{r_o \times (m-r_o)} \quad \text{and} \quad Q_{\alpha\perp,n}\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} = \Lambda_{\alpha\perp,n}Q_{\alpha\perp,n} \quad (10.15)$$

where  $\Lambda_{\alpha\perp,n}$  is an diagonal matrix with the ordered last (smallest)  $m - r_o$  eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ . Using the results in (10.15), we can define a useful estimator of  $\Pi_o$  as

$$\Pi_{n,f} = \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - P_{\alpha\perp,n}\Lambda_{\alpha\perp,n}Q_{\alpha\perp,n}. \quad (10.16)$$

The estimator  $\Pi_{n,f}$  is infeasible because  $r_o$  is unknown.  $\Pi_{n,f}$  may be interpreted as a modification to the unrestricted estimate  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  which removes components in the eigenrepresentation of the unrestricted estimate that correspond to the smallest  $m - r_o$  eigenvalues.

By definition

$$Q_{\alpha,n}\Pi_{n,f} = Q_{\alpha,n}\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - Q_{\alpha,n}P_{\alpha\perp,n}\Lambda_{\alpha\perp,n}Q_{\alpha\perp,n} = \Lambda_{\alpha,n}Q_{\alpha,n} \quad (10.17)$$

where  $\Lambda_{\alpha,n}$  is an diagonal matrix with the ordered first (largest)  $r_o$  eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ , and more importantly

$$Q_{\alpha\perp,n}\Pi_{n,f} = Q_{\alpha\perp,n}\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - Q_{\alpha\perp,n}P_{\alpha\perp,n}\Lambda_{\alpha\perp,n}Q_{\alpha\perp,n} = \mathbf{0}_{(m-r_o) \times m}. \quad (10.18)$$



From Lemma 10.2.(b), (10.17) and (10.18), we can deduce that  $Q_{\alpha,n}\Pi_{n,f}$  is a  $r_o \times m$  matrix which is nonzero w.p.a.1 and  $Q_{\alpha_\perp,n}\Pi_{n,f}$  is always a  $(m - r_o) \times m$  zero matrix for all  $n$ . Moreover

$$\Pi_{n,f} - \Pi_o = (\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o) - P_{\alpha_\perp,n}\Lambda_{\alpha_\perp,n}Q_{\alpha_\perp,n}$$

and so under Lemma 10.2.(a) and (c),

$$(\Pi_{n,f} - \Pi_o)Q^{-1}D_n^{-1} = O_p(1). \quad (10.19)$$

Thus, the estimator  $\Pi_{n,f}$  is at least as good as the OLS estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  in terms of its rate of convergence. Using (10.19) we can compare the LS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  with  $\Pi_{n,f}$  to establish the consistency and convergence rate of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$ .

**Proof of Theorem 3.1.** Define

$$V_n(\Pi) = \sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - \Pi Y_{t-1}\|^2 + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi)\|.$$

We can write

$$\sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - \Pi Y_{t-1}\|^2 = [\Delta y - (Y'_{-1} \otimes I_m) \text{vec}(\Pi)]' [\Delta y - (Y'_{-1} \otimes I_m) \text{vec}(\Pi)]$$

where  $\Delta y = \text{vec}(\Delta Y)$ ,  $\Delta Y = (\Delta Y_1, \dots, \Delta Y_n)_{m \times n}$  and  $Y_{-1} = (Y_0, \dots, Y_{T-1})_{m \times n}$ .

By definition,  $V_n(\widehat{\Pi}_n) \leq V_n(\Pi_{n,f})$  and thus

$$\begin{aligned} & \text{vec}(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec}(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) \\ & + 2 \text{vec}(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)' \text{vec} \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} u'_t \right) \\ & + 2 \text{vec}(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec}(\Pi_o - \Pi_{n,f}) \\ & \leq n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_{n,f})\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\widehat{\Pi}_n)\| \right]. \end{aligned} \quad (10.20)$$

When  $r_o = 0$ ,  $\Delta Y_t$  is stationary and  $Y_t$  is full rank  $I(1)$ , so that

$$n^{-2} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \rightarrow_d \int_0^1 B_u(a) B'_u(a) da \text{ and } n^{-2} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} u'_t = O_p(n^{-1}). \quad (10.21)$$

From the results in (10.20) and (10.21), we get

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\|^2 - 2(c_{1,n} + c_{2,n}) \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\| - d_n \leq 0, \quad (10.22)$$

where  $\mu_{n,\min}$  denotes the smallest eigenvalue of  $n^{-2} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1}$ , which is positive w.p.a.1,

$$\begin{aligned} c_{1,n} &= \left\| n^{-2} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} u'_t \right\|, \\ c_{2,n} &= m \left\| n^{-2} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \right\| \|\Pi_{n,f} - \Pi_o\|, \\ \text{and } d_n &= n^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_{n,f})\|. \end{aligned} \quad (10.23)$$

Under (10.19) and (10.21),  $c_{1,n} = o_p(1)$  and  $c_{2,n} = o_p(1)$ . Under (10.17), (10.18) and  $\lambda_{r,k,n} = o_p(1)$  for all  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi$ ,

$$d_n = n^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^{r_o} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_{n,f})\| = o_p(n^{-1}). \quad (10.24)$$

From (10.22), (10.23) and (10.24), it is straightforward to deduce that  $\|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\| = o_p(1)$ . The consistency of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  follows from the triangle inequality and the consistency of  $\Pi_{n,f}$ .

When  $r_o = m$ ,  $Y_t$  is stationary and we have

$$n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \rightarrow_p \Sigma_{yy} = R(1) \Omega_u R(1)' \text{ and } n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} u'_t = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}}). \quad (10.25)$$

From the results in (10.20) and (10.25), we get

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\|^2 - 2n(c_{1,n} + c_{2,n}) \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\| - nd_n \leq 0 \quad (10.26)$$

where  $\mu_{n,\min}$  denotes the smallest eigenvalue of  $n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1}$ , which is positive w.p.a.1,  $c_{1,n}$ ,  $c_{2,n}$  and  $d_n$  are defined in (10.24). It is clear that  $nc_{1,n} = o_p(1)$  and  $nc_{2,n} = o_p(1)$  under (10.25) and (10.19), and  $nd_n = o_p(1)$  under (10.24). So, consistency of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  follows directly from the inequality in (10.26), triangle inequality and the consistency of  $\Pi_{n,f}$ .

Denote  $B_n = (D_n Q)^{-1}$ , then when  $0 < r_o < m$ , we can use the results in Lemma 10.1 to deduce that

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} &= Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n D_n^{-1} Q^{-1} \\ &= B_n \left[ \begin{pmatrix} \Sigma_{z_1 z_1} & 0 \\ 0 & \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \end{pmatrix} + o_p(1) \right] B'_n, \end{aligned}$$

and thus

$$vec(\Pi_{n,f} - \hat{\Pi}_n)' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \otimes I_m \right) vec(\Pi_{n,f} - \hat{\Pi}_n) \geq \mu_{n,\min} \|(\hat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}) B_n\|^2, \quad (10.27)$$

where  $\mu_{n,\min}$  is the smallest eigenvalue of  $D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n$  and is positive w.p.a.1. Next observe that

$$\left| \left[ vec(\Pi_{n,f} - \hat{\Pi}_n) \right]' vec \left( B_n D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} u'_t \right) \right| \leq \|(\hat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}) B_n\| e_{1,n} \quad (10.28)$$

and

$$\left| vec(\Pi_{n,f} - \hat{\Pi}_n)' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \otimes I_m \right) vec(\Pi_o - \Pi_{n,f}) \right| \leq \|(\hat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}) B_n\| e_{2,n} \quad (10.29)$$

where

$$e_{1,n} = \|D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} u'_t\| \text{ and } e_{2,n} = m \|D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n\| \times \|(\Pi_{n,f} - \Pi_o) B_n\|. \quad (10.30)$$

Under Lemma 10.1 and (10.19),  $e_{1,n} = O_p(1)$  and  $e_{2,n} = O_p(1)$ . From (10.20), (10.27), (10.28), (10.29), we have the inequality

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|(\hat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}) B_n\|^2 - 2(e_{1,n} + e_{2,n}) \|(\hat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}) B_n\| - n d_n \leq 0, \quad (10.31)$$

which implies

$$(\hat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}) B_n = O_p(1 + \sqrt{n} d_n^{\frac{1}{2}}). \quad (10.32)$$

By the definition of  $B_n$ , (10.19) and (10.32), we deduce that

$$\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}} + d_n^{\frac{1}{2}}) = o_p(1),$$

which implies the consistency of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$ . ■

**Proof of Theorem 3.2.** By the triangle inequality and (10.18), we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_{n,f})\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\widehat{\Pi}_n)\| \right] \\ & \leq \sum_{k=1}^{r_o} \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_{n,f})\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\widehat{\Pi}_n)\| \right] \\ & \leq r_o \max_{k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\|. \end{aligned} \quad (10.33)$$

Using (10.33) and invoking the inequality in (10.20) we get

$$\begin{aligned} & \text{vec}(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}' \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec}(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) \\ & + 2 \text{vec}(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)' \text{vec} \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} u_t' \right) \\ & + 2 \text{vec}(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}' \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec}(\Pi_o - \Pi_{n,f}) \\ & \leq nr_o \delta_{r,n} \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\|. \end{aligned} \quad (10.34)$$

When  $r_o = 0$ , we use (10.23) and (10.34) to obtain

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\|^2 - 2(c_{1,n} + c_{2,n} + n^{-1} r_o \delta_{r,n}) \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\| \leq 0 \quad (10.35)$$

where under (10.21)  $c_{1,n} = O_p(n^{-1})$  and  $c_{2,n} = O_p(n^{-1})$ . We deduce from the inequality (10.35) and (10.19) that

$$\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o = O_p(n^{-1} + n^{-1} \delta_{r,n}). \quad (10.36)$$

When  $r_o = m$ , we use (10.34) to obtain

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\|^2 - 2n(c_{1,n} + c_{2,n} + n^{-1} r_o \delta_{r,n}) \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_{n,f}\| \leq 0 \quad (10.37)$$

where  $nc_{1,n} = \|\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} u'_t\| = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}})$  and  $nc_{2,n} = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}})$  by Lemma 10.1 and (10.19). The inequality (10.37) and (10.19) lead to

$$\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}} + \delta_{r,n}). \quad (10.38)$$

When  $0 < r_o < m$ , we can use the results in (10.27), (10.28), (10.29), (10.30) and (10.34) to deduce that

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)B_n\|^2 - 2(e_{1,n} + e_{2,n}) \|(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)B_n\| \leq r_o n \delta_{r,n} \|\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n\| \quad (10.39)$$

where  $e_{1,n} = \|D_n Q \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} u'_t\| = O_p(1)$  and  $e_{2,n} = O_p(1)$  by Lemma 10.1 and (10.19). By the definition of  $B_n$ ,

$$\|(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)B_n B_n^{-1}\| \leq cn^{-\frac{1}{2}} \|(\Pi_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)B_n\| \quad (10.40)$$

where  $c$  is some finite positive constant. Using (10.39), (10.40) and (10.19), we get

$$(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o)B_n = O_p(1 + n^{\frac{1}{2}} \delta_{r,n}) \quad (10.41)$$

which finishes the proof. ■

**Proof of Theorem 3.3.** To facilitate the proof, we rewrite the LS shrinkage estimation problem as

$$\widehat{T}_n = \arg \min_{T \in R^{m \times m}} \sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - P_n T Y_{t-1}\|^2 + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(P_n T)\|. \quad (10.42)$$

By definition,  $\widehat{\Pi}_n = P_n \widehat{T}_n$  and  $\widehat{T}_n = Q_n \widehat{\Pi}_n$  for all  $n$ . Under (3.9) and (3.10),

$$\widehat{T}_n = \begin{pmatrix} Q_{\alpha,n} \widehat{\Pi}_n \\ Q_{\alpha_\perp,n} \widehat{\Pi}_n \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} Q_{\alpha,n} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \\ Q_{\alpha_\perp,n} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \end{pmatrix} + o_p(1). \quad (10.43)$$

Results in (3.11) follows if we can show that the last  $m - r_o$  rows of  $\widehat{T}_n$  are estimated as zeros w.p.a.1.

By definition,  $\Phi_{n,k}(P_n T) = Q_n(k)P_n T = T(k)$  and the problem in (10.42) can be rewritten as

$$\widehat{T}_n = \arg \min_{T \in R^{m \times m}} \sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - P_n T Y_{t-1}\|^2 + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|T(k)\|, \quad (10.44)$$

which has the following Karush-Kuhn-Tucker (KKT) optimality conditions

$$\begin{cases} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - P_n \widehat{T}_n Y_{t-1})' P_n(k) Y_{t-1}' = \frac{\lambda_{r,k,n}}{2} \frac{\widehat{T}_n(k)}{\|\widehat{T}_n(k)\|} & \text{if } \widehat{T}_n(k) \neq 0 \\ \left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - P_n \widehat{T}_n Y_{t-1})' P_n(k) Y_{t-1}' \right\| \leq \frac{\lambda_{r,k,n}}{2} & \text{if } \widehat{T}_n(k) = 0 \end{cases}, \quad (10.45)$$

for  $k = 1, \dots, m$ . Conditional on the event  $\{Q_n(k_o) \widehat{\Pi}_n \neq 0\}$  for some  $k_o$  satisfying  $r_o < k_o \leq m$ , we obtain the following equation from the KKT optimality conditions

$$\left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - P_n \widehat{T}_n Y_{t-1})' P_n(k_o) Y_{t-1}' \right\| = \frac{\lambda_{r,k_o,n}}{2}. \quad (10.46)$$

The sample average in the left hand side of (10.46) can be rewritten as

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - P_n \widehat{T}_n Y_{t-1})' P_n(k_o) Y_{t-1}' \\ &= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t - (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o) Y_{t-1}]' P_n(k_o) Y_{t-1}' \\ &= \frac{P_n'(k_o) \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y_{t-1}'}{n} - \frac{P_n'(k_o) (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o) \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}'}{n}. \end{aligned} \quad (10.47)$$

Under Lemma 10.2, Lemma 10.1 and Theorem 3.2

$$\frac{P_n'(k_o) \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y_{t-1}'}{n} = O_p(1) \quad (10.48)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{P_n'(k_o) (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o) \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}'}{n} \\ &= P_n'(k_o) (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \frac{D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z_{t-1}'}{n} Q'^{-1} = O_p(1). \end{aligned} \quad (10.49)$$

Using the results in (10.47), (10.48) and (10.49), we deduce that

$$\left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - P_n \widehat{T}_n Y_{t-1})' P_n(k_o) Y_{t-1}' \right\| = O_p(1). \quad (10.50)$$

By the assumption on the tuning parameters, we have  $\frac{\lambda_{r,k_o,n}}{2} \rightarrow_p \infty$ , which together with the results in (10.46) and (10.50) implies that

$$\Pr \left( Q_n(k_o) \widehat{\Pi}_n = 0 \right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty.$$

As the above result holds for any  $k_o$  such that  $r_o < k_o \leq m$ , this finishes the proof. ■

**Proof of Theorem 3.5.** From Corollary 3.4, for large enough  $n$  the shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  can be decomposed as  $\widehat{\alpha}_n \widehat{\beta}'_n$  w.p.a.1, where  $\widehat{\alpha}_n$  and  $\widehat{\beta}_n$  are some  $m \times r_o$  matrices. Without loss of generality, we assume the first  $r_o$  columns of  $\Pi_o$  are linearly independent. To ensure identification, we normalize  $\beta_o$  as  $\beta_o = [I_{r_o}, O_{r_o}]'$  where  $O_{r_o}$  is some  $r_o \times (m - r_o)$  matrix such that

$$\Pi_o = \alpha_o \beta'_o = [\alpha_o, \alpha_o O_{r_o}]. \quad (10.51)$$

Hence  $\alpha_o$  is the first  $r_o$  columns of  $\Pi_o$  which is an  $m \times r_o$  matrix with full rank and  $O_{r_o}$  is uniquely determined by the equation  $\alpha_o O_{r_o} = \Pi_{o,2}$ , where  $\Pi_{o,2}$  denotes the last  $m - r_o$  columns of  $\Pi_o$ . Correspondingly, for large enough  $n$  we can normalize  $\widehat{\beta}_n$  as  $\widehat{\beta}_n = [I_{r_o}, \widehat{O}_n]'$  where  $\widehat{O}_n$  is some  $r_o \times (m - r_o)$  matrix. Let  $\beta_{o,\perp} = (\beta'_{1,o,\perp}, \beta'_{2,o,\perp})'$  where  $\beta_{1,o,\perp}$  is a  $r_o \times (m - r_o)$  matrix and  $\beta_{2,o,\perp}$  is a  $(m - r_o) \times (m - r_o)$  matrix. Then by definition

$$\beta'_{1,o,\perp} + \beta'_{2,o,\perp} O'_{r_o} = 0 \text{ and } \beta'_{1,o,\perp} \beta_{1,o,\perp} + \beta'_{2,o,\perp} \beta_{2,o,\perp} = I_{m-r_o} \quad (10.52)$$

which implies that

$$\beta'_{1,o,\perp} = -\beta'_{2,o,\perp} O'_{r_o} \text{ and } \beta_{2,o,\perp} = (I_{m-r_o} + O'_{r_o} O_{r_o})^{-\frac{1}{2}}. \quad (10.53)$$

From Theorem 3.2 and  $n^{\frac{1}{2}} \delta_{r,n} = o_p(1)$ , we have

$$O_p(1) = (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} = (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o) \left[ \sqrt{n} \alpha_o (\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1}, n \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \right] \quad (10.54)$$

which implies that

$$\begin{aligned} O_p(1) &= \sqrt{n}(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o)\alpha_o(\beta'_o\alpha_o)^{-1} \\ &= \sqrt{n}\left[(\widehat{\alpha}_n - \alpha_o)\widehat{\beta}'_n + \alpha_o(\widehat{\beta}_n - \beta_o)'\right]\alpha_o(\beta'_o\alpha_o)^{-1} \end{aligned} \quad (10.55)$$

and

$$n\widehat{\alpha}_n\left(\widehat{\beta}_n - \beta_o\right)'\beta_{o,\perp}(\alpha'_{o,\perp}\beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} = O_p(1). \quad (10.56)$$

By the definitions of  $\widehat{\beta}_n$  and  $\beta_{o,\perp}$  and the result in (10.56), we get

$$O_p(1) = \beta'_o\widehat{\alpha}_n\left[n(\widehat{O}_n - O_{r_o})\right]\beta_{2,o,\perp}(\alpha'_{o,\perp}\beta_{o,\perp})^{-1}$$

which implies that

$$n(\widehat{O}_n - O_{r_o}) = [\beta'_o\alpha_o + o_p(1)]^{-1}O_p(1)(\alpha'_{o,\perp}\beta_{o,\perp})(I_{m-r_o} + O'_{r_o}O_{r_o})^{\frac{1}{2}} = O_p(1) \quad (10.57)$$

where  $\beta'_o\widehat{\alpha}_n = \beta'_o\alpha_o + o_p(1)$  is by the consistency of  $\widehat{\alpha}_n$ . By the definition of  $\widehat{\beta}_n$ , (10.57) means that  $n(\widehat{\beta}_n - \beta_o) = O_p(1)$ , which together with (10.55) implies that

$$\sqrt{n}(\widehat{\alpha}_n - \alpha_o) = \left[O_p(1) - \alpha_o\sqrt{n}(\widehat{\beta}_n - \beta_o)'\alpha_o\right][\beta'_o\alpha_o + o_p(1)]^{-1} = O_p(1). \quad (10.58)$$

From Corollary 3.4, we can deduce that  $\widehat{\alpha}_n$  and  $\widehat{\beta}_n$  minimize the following criterion function w.p.a.1

$$V_n(\alpha, \beta) = \sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - \alpha\beta'Y_{t-1}\|^2 + n \sum_{k=1}^{r_o} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\alpha\beta')\|. \quad (10.59)$$

Define  $U_{1,n}^* = \sqrt{n}(\widehat{\alpha}_n - \alpha_o)$  and  $U_{3,n}^* = n(\widehat{\beta}_n - \beta_o) = [\mathbf{0}_{r_o}, n(\widehat{O}_n - O_o)] \equiv [\mathbf{0}_{r_o}, U_{2,n}^*]$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o)Q^{-1}D_n^{-1} &= \left[\widehat{\alpha}_n(\widehat{\beta}_n - \beta_o)' + (\widehat{\alpha}_n - \alpha_o)\beta'_o\right]Q^{-1}D_n^{-1} \\ &= \left[n^{-\frac{1}{2}}\widehat{\alpha}_nU_{3,n}^*\alpha_o(\beta'_o\alpha_o)^{-1} + U_{1,n}^*, \widehat{\alpha}_nU_{3,n}^*\beta_{o,\perp}(\alpha'_{o,\perp}\beta_{o,\perp})^{-1}\right]. \end{aligned}$$

Define

$$\Pi_n(U) = \left[n^{-\frac{1}{2}}\widehat{\alpha}_nU_3\alpha_o(\beta'_o\alpha_o)^{-1} + U_1, \widehat{\alpha}_nU_3\beta_{o,\perp}(\alpha'_{o,\perp}\beta_{o,\perp})^{-1}\right],$$



where  $U_3 = [\mathbf{0}_{r_o}, U_2]$ . Then by definition,  $U_n^* = (U_{1,n}^*, U_{2,n}^*)$  minimizes the following criterion function w.p.a.1

$$\begin{aligned} V_n(U) &= \sum_{t=1}^n \left( \|\Delta Y_t - \Pi_o Y_{t-1} - \Pi_n(U) D_n Z_{t-1}\|^2 - \|\Delta Y_t - \Pi_o Y_{t-1}\|^2 \right) \\ &\quad + n \sum_{k=1}^{r_o} \lambda_{r,k,n} [ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_n(U) D_n Q + \Pi_o)\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_o)\| ]. \end{aligned}$$

For any compact set  $K \subset R^{m \times r_o} \times R^{r_o \times (m-r_o)}$  and any  $U \in K$ , we have

$$\Pi_n(U) D_n Q = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}}).$$

Hence, from the triangle inequality, we can deduce that for all  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi$

$$\begin{aligned} &n |\lambda_{r,k,n} [ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_n(U) D_n Q + \Pi_o)\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_o)\| ]| \\ &\leq n \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_n(U) D_n Q)\| = O_p(n^{\frac{1}{2}} \lambda_{r,k,n}) = o_p(1), \end{aligned} \quad (10.60)$$

uniformly over  $U \in K$ .

From (10.58),

$$\Pi_n(U) \rightarrow_p [U_1, \alpha_o U_3 \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1}] \equiv \Pi_\infty(U) \quad (10.61)$$

uniformly over  $U \in K$ . By Lemma 10.1 and (10.61), we deduce that

$$\begin{aligned} &\sum_{t=1}^n \left( \|\Delta Y_t - \Pi_o Y_{t-1} - \Pi_n(U) D_n Z_{t-1}\|_E^2 - \|\Delta Y_t - \Pi_o Y_{t-1}\|_E^2 \right) \\ &= \text{vec} [\Pi_n(U)]' \left( D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec} [\Pi_n(U)] \\ &\quad - 2 \text{vec} [\Pi_n(U)]' \text{vec} \left( \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} D_n \right) \\ &\rightarrow_d \text{vec} [\Pi_\infty(U)]' \left[ \begin{pmatrix} \Sigma_{z_1 z_1} & 0 \\ 0 & \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \end{pmatrix} \otimes I_m \right] \text{vec} [\Pi_\infty(U)] \\ &\quad - 2 \text{vec} [\Pi_\infty(U)]' \text{vec} [(V_{1,m}, V_{2,m})] \equiv V(U) \end{aligned} \quad (10.62)$$

uniformly over  $U \in K$ , where  $V_{1,m} \equiv N(0, \Omega_u \otimes \Sigma_{z_1 z_1})$  and  $V_{2,m} \equiv (\int B_{w_2} dB'_u)'$ .

By definition  $\Pi_\infty(U) = [U_1, \alpha_o U_2 \beta_{2,o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1}]$ , thus

$$vec[\Pi_\infty(U)] = [vec(U_1)', vec(\alpha_o U_2 \beta_{2,o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1})']'$$

and

$$vec(\alpha_o U_2 \beta_{2,o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1}) = [(\beta'_{o,\perp} \alpha_{o,\perp})^{-1} \beta'_{2,o,\perp} \otimes \alpha_o] vec(U_2).$$

Using above expression, we can rewrite  $V(U)$  as

$$\begin{aligned} V(U) &= vec(U_1)' [\Sigma_{z_1 z_1} \otimes I_m] vec(U_1) \\ &+ vec(U_2)' \left[ \beta_{2,o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} (\beta'_{o,\perp} \alpha_{o,\perp})^{-1} \beta'_{2,o,\perp} \otimes \alpha'_o \alpha_o \right] vec(U_2) \\ &- 2vec(U_1)' vec(V_{1,m}) - 2vec(U_2)' vec[\alpha'_o V_{2,m} (\beta'_{o,\perp} \alpha_{o,\perp})^{-1} \beta'_{2,o,\perp}]. \end{aligned} \quad (10.63)$$

The expression in (10.63) makes it clear that  $V(U)$  is uniquely minimized at

$$\left[ U_1^*, U_2^* (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp}) \beta_{2,o,\perp}^{-1} \right]$$

where

$$U_1^* = B_{m,1} \text{ and } U_2^* = (\alpha'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o B_{m,2}. \quad (10.64)$$

From (10.57) and (10.58), we can see that  $U_n^*$  is asymptotically tight. Invoking the Argmax Continuous Mapping Theorem (ACMT), we can deduce that

$$U_n^* = (U_{1,n}^*, U_{2,n}^*) \rightarrow_d \left[ U_1^*, U_2^* (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp}) \beta_{2,o,\perp}^{-1} \right]$$

which together with (10.61) and CMT implies that

$$\left( \widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o \right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \rightarrow_d \left( B_{m,1} \quad \alpha_o (\alpha'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o B_{m,2} \right).$$

This finishes the proof. ■

**Proof of Corollary 3.6.** The consistency, convergence rate and super efficiency of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  can be established using similar arguments in the proof of Theorem 3.1, Theorem 3.2 and Theorem 3.3.

Under the super efficiency of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$ , the true rank  $r_o$  is imposed on  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  w.p.a.1. Thus for large enough  $n$ , the GLS shrinkage estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n}$  can be decomposed as  $\widehat{\alpha}_{g,n}\widehat{\beta}'_{g,n}$  w.p.a.1, where  $\widehat{\alpha}_{g,n}$  and  $\widehat{\beta}_{g,n}$  are some  $m \times r_o$  matrices and they minimize the following criterion function w.p.a.1

$$\sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - \alpha\beta'Y_{t-1})' \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1} (\Delta Y_t - \alpha\beta'Y_{t-1}) + n \sum_{k=1}^{r_o} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\alpha\beta')\|. \quad (10.65)$$

Using the similar arguments in the proof of Theorem 3.5, we define

$$\Pi_o = \alpha_o\beta'_o = [\alpha_o, \alpha_o O_{r_o}] \text{ and } \beta_o = [I_{r_o}, O_{r_o}]'$$

where  $O_{r_o}$  is some  $r_o \times (m - r_o)$  matrix uniquely determined by the equation  $\alpha_o O_{r_o} = \Pi_{o,2}$ , where  $\Pi_{o,2}$  denotes the last  $m - r_o$  columns of  $\Pi_o$ .

Define  $U_{1,n}^* = \sqrt{n}(\widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} - \alpha_o)$  and  $U_{3,n}^* = n(\widehat{\beta}_{g,n} - \beta_o)' = [\mathbf{0}_{r_o}, n(\widehat{O}_{g,n} - O_o)] \equiv [\mathbf{0}_{r_o}, U_{2,n}^*]$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} &= \left[ \widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} (\widehat{\beta}_{g,n} - \beta_o)' + (\widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} - \alpha_o) \beta_o' \right] Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \\ &= \left[ n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} U_{3,n}^* \alpha_o (\beta_o' \alpha_o)^{-1} + U_{1,n}^*, \widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} U_{3,n}^* \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \right]. \end{aligned}$$

Define

$$\Pi_n(U) = \left[ n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} U_3 \alpha_o (\beta_o' \alpha_o)^{-1} + U_1, \widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} U_3 \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \right],$$

then by definition,  $U_n^* = (U_{1,n}^*, U_{2,n}^*)$  minimizes the following criterion function w.p.a.1

$$\begin{aligned} V_n(U) &= \sum_{t=1}^n \left[ (u_t - \Pi_n(U) D_n Z_{t-1})' \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1} (u_t - \Pi_n(U) D_n Z_{t-1}) - u_t' \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1} u_t \right] \\ &\quad + n \sum_{k=1}^{r_o} \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_n(U) D_n Q + \Pi_o)\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_o)\| \right]. \end{aligned} \quad (10.66)$$

Following similar arguments in the proof of Theorem 3.5, we can deduce that for any  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi$

$$n |\lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_n(U) D_n Q + \Pi_o)\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_o)\| \right]| = o_p(1), \quad (10.67)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{t=1}^n (u_t - \Pi_n(U)D_n Z_{t-1})' \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1} (u_t - \Pi_n(U)D_n Z_{t-1}) - \sum_{t=1}^n u_t' \widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1} u_t \\
& \rightarrow_d \text{vec}(U_1)' (\Sigma_{z_1 z_1} \otimes \Omega_u^{-1}) \text{vec}(U_1) \\
& \quad + \text{vec}(U_2)' \left[ \beta_{2,o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} (\beta'_{o,\perp} \alpha_{o,\perp})^{-1} \beta'_{2,o,\perp} \otimes \alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} \alpha_o \right] \text{vec}(U_2) \\
& \quad - 2 \text{vec}(U_1)' \text{vec} (\Omega_u^{-1} V_{1,m}) - 2 \text{vec}(U_2)' \text{vec} [\alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} V_{2,m} (\beta'_{o,\perp} \alpha_{o,\perp})^{-1} \beta'_{2,o,\perp}] \\
& \equiv V(U)
\end{aligned} \tag{10.68}$$

uniformly over  $U$  in any compact subspace of  $R^{m \times r_o} \times R^{r_o \times (m-r_o)}$ .  $V(U)$  is uniquely minimized at  $(U_{g,1}^*, U_{g,2}^*)$ , where  $U_{g,1}^* = B_{1,m} \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1}$  and

$$U_{g,2}^* = (\alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} \alpha_o)^{-1} (\alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} V_{2,m}) \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \beta_{2,o,\perp}^{-1}.$$

Invoking the ACMT, we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
(\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n} - \Pi_o) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} &= \left[ \widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} (\widehat{\beta}_{g,n} - \beta_o)' + (\widehat{\alpha}_{g,n} - \alpha_o) \beta'_o \right] Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \\
&\rightarrow_d \left[ V_{1,m} \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1}, \alpha_o (\alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} \alpha_o)^{-1} (\alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} V_{2,m}) \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} \right].
\end{aligned} \tag{10.69}$$

By the definition of  $w_1$  and  $w_2$ , we can define  $\Omega_{\tilde{u}} = Q \Omega_u Q'$  such that

$$\Omega_{\tilde{u}} = \begin{pmatrix} \Sigma_{w_1 w_1} & \Sigma_{w_1 w_2} \\ \Sigma_{w_2 w_1} & \Sigma_{w_2 w_2} \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } \Omega_{\tilde{u}}^{-1} = \begin{pmatrix} \Omega_{\tilde{u}}(11) & \Omega_{\tilde{u}}(12) \\ \Omega_{\tilde{u}}(21) & \Omega_{\tilde{u}}(22) \end{pmatrix}.$$

Note that

$$\begin{aligned}
(\alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} &= (\alpha'_o Q' \Omega_{\tilde{u}}^{-1} Q \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o Q' \Omega_{\tilde{u}}^{-1} Q \\
&= [(\alpha'_o \beta_o) \Omega_{\tilde{u}}(11) (\beta'_o \alpha_o)]^{-1} [(\alpha'_o \beta_o), 0] \Omega_{\tilde{u}}^{-1} Q \\
&= (\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \Omega_{\tilde{u}}^{-1}(11) [\Omega_{\tilde{u}}(11) \beta'_o + \Omega_{\tilde{u}}(12) \alpha'_{o,\perp}].
\end{aligned} \tag{10.70}$$

Under  $\Omega_{\tilde{u}}(12) = -\Omega_{\tilde{u}}(11)\Sigma_{w_1w_2}\Sigma_{w_2w_2}^{-1}$ ,

$$(\alpha'_o\Omega_u^{-1}\alpha_o)^{-1}\alpha'_o\Omega_u^{-1} = (\beta'_o\alpha_o)^{-1}(\beta'_o - \Sigma_{w_1w_2}\Sigma_{w_2w_2}^{-1}\alpha'_{o,\perp}). \quad (10.71)$$

Now, using (10.69) and (10.71), we can deduce that

$$\left(\widehat{\Pi}_{g,n} - \Pi_o\right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \rightarrow_d \left( B_{m,1} \quad \alpha_o(\beta'_o\alpha_o)^{-1} \left( \int B_{w_2} dB'_{u \cdot w_2} \right)' \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} \right).$$

This finishes the proof. ■

### 10.3 Proof of Main Results in Section 4

The following lemma is useful in establishing the asymptotic properties of the shrinkage estimator with weakly dependent innovations.

**Lemma 10.3** *Under Assumption 3.2 and 4.1, (a), (b) and (c) of Lemma 10.1 are unchanged, while Lemma 10.1.(d) becomes*

$$n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t Z'_{1,t-1} - \Sigma_{uz_1}(1)] \rightarrow_d N(0, V_{uz_1}), \quad (10.72)$$

where  $\Sigma_{uz_1}(1) = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \Sigma_{uu}(j) \beta_o (R^j)'$  <math>\infty</math> and  $V_{uz_1}$  is the long run variance matrix of  $u_t \otimes Z_{1,t-1}$ ; and Lemma 10.1.(e) becomes

$$n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{2,t-1} \rightarrow_d \left( \int B_{w_2} dB'_u \right)' + (\Gamma_{uu} - \Sigma_{uu}) \alpha_{o\perp}. \quad (10.73)$$

**Proof of Lemma 10.3.** From the partial sum expression in (3.5), we get  $Z_{1,t-1} = \beta'_o Y_{t-1} = R(L)\beta'_o u_t$ , which implies that  $\{\beta'_o Y_{t-1}\}_{t \geq 1}$  is a stationary process. Note that

$$E [u_t Z'_{1,t-1}] = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} E [u_t u'_{t-j}] \beta_o (R^j)' = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \Sigma_{uu}(j) \beta_o (R^j)' < \infty.$$

Using a CLT for linear process time series (e.g. the multivariate version of theorem 8 and Remark 3.9 of Phillips and Solo, 1992), we deduce that

$$n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t Z'_{1,t-1} - \Sigma_{uz_1}(1)] \rightarrow_d N(0, V_{uz_1}),$$

which establishes (10.72). The results of (a)-(c) and (e) can be proved using similar arguments to those of Lemma 10.1. ■

Let  $P_1 = (P_{11}, P_{12})$  be the orthonormalized right eigenvector matrix of  $\Pi_1$  and  $\Lambda_1$  be a  $r_1 \times r_1$  diagonal matrix of nonzero eigenvalues of  $\Pi_1$ , where  $P_{11}$  is an  $m \times r_1$  matrix (of eigenvectors of nonzero eigenvalues) and  $P_{12}$  is an  $m \times (m - r_1)$  matrix (of eigenvectors of zero eigenvalues). By the eigenvalue decomposition,

$$\Pi_1 = (P_{11}, P_{12}) \begin{pmatrix} \Lambda_1 & 0 \\ 0 & \mathbf{0}_{m-r_1} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} Q_{11} \\ Q_{12} \end{pmatrix} = P_{11} \Lambda_1 Q_{11} \quad (10.74)$$

where  $Q' = (Q'_{11}, Q'_{12})$  and  $Q = P^{-1}$ . By definition

$$\begin{pmatrix} Q_{11} \\ Q_{12} \end{pmatrix} (P_{11}, P_{12}) = \begin{pmatrix} Q_{11} P_{11} & Q_{11} P_{12} \\ Q_{12} P_{11} & Q_{12} P_{12} \end{pmatrix} = I_m \quad (10.75)$$

which implies that  $Q_{11} P_{11} = I_{r_1}$ . From (10.74), without loss of generality, we can define  $\tilde{\alpha}_1 = P_{11}$  and  $\tilde{\beta}_1 = Q'_{11} \Lambda_1$ . By (10.75), we deduce that

$$\tilde{\beta}'_1 \tilde{\alpha}_1 = \Lambda_1 Q_{11} P_{11} = \Lambda_1 \text{ and } \tilde{\alpha}'_1 \tilde{\beta}_1 = P'_{11} Q'_{11} \Lambda_1 = \Lambda_1$$

which imply that  $\tilde{\beta}'_1 \tilde{\alpha}_1$  and  $\tilde{\alpha}'_1 \tilde{\beta}_1$  are nonsingular  $r_1 \times r_1$  matrix. Without loss of generality, we let  $\tilde{\alpha}_{1\perp} = P_{12}$  and  $\tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} = Q'_{12}$ , then  $\tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} = I_{m-r_1}$  and under (10.75),

$$\tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \tilde{\alpha}_1 = Q_{12} P_{11} = 0$$

which implies that  $\tilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \tilde{\alpha}_1 = 0$  as  $\tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} = (\tilde{\beta}_{\perp}, \beta_{o\perp})$ .

Let  $[\phi_1(\hat{\Pi}_{1st}), \dots, \phi_m(\hat{\Pi}_{1st})]$  and  $[\phi_1(\Pi_1), \dots, \phi_m(\Pi_1)]$  be the ordered eigenvalues of  $\hat{\Pi}_{1st}$  and  $\Pi_1$  respectively. For the ease of notation, we define

$$\mathcal{N}_1 \equiv [N(0, V_{uz_1}) + \Sigma_{uz_1} (1) \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} N(0, V_{z_1 z_1})] \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \beta'_o$$

where  $N(0, V_{uz_1})$  is a random matrix defined in (10.72) and  $N(0, V_{z_1 z_1})$  denotes the matrix limit distribution of  $\sqrt{n} (\hat{S}_{11} - \Sigma_{z_1 z_1})$ . We also define

$$\mathcal{N}_2 \equiv \left[ \int dB_u B'_u + (\Gamma_{uu} - \Sigma_{uu}) \right] \alpha_{o\perp} \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} \alpha'_{o\perp}.$$

The next lemma provides asymptotic properties of the OLS estimate and its eigenvalues when the data is weakly dependent.

**Lemma 10.4** *Under Assumption 3.2 and 4.1, we have the following results:*

(a) the OLS estimator  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  satisfies

$$\left(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1\right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} = O_p(1) \quad (10.76)$$

where  $\Pi_1$  is defined in (4.2);

(b) the eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  satisfy  $\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}) \rightarrow_p \phi_k(\Pi_1)$  for  $k = 1, \dots, m$ ;

(c) the last  $m - r_o$  ordered eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  satisfy

$$n[\phi_{r_o+1}(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}), \dots, \phi_m(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})] \rightarrow_d [\tilde{\phi}'_{r_o+1}, \dots, \tilde{\phi}'_m] \quad (10.77)$$

where  $\tilde{\phi}'_j$  ( $j = r_o + 1, \dots, m$ ) are the ordered solutions of

$$\left| uI_{m-r_o} - \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ \mathcal{N}_2 + \mathcal{N}_1 \tilde{\beta}_\perp \left( \tilde{\beta}'_\perp \mathcal{N}_1 \tilde{\beta}_\perp \right)^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_\perp \mathcal{N}_2 \right] \beta_{o\perp} \right| = 0; \quad (10.78)$$

(d)  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  has  $r_o - r_1$  eigenvalues satisfying

$$\sqrt{n}[\phi_{r_1+1}(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}), \dots, \phi_{r_o}(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})] \rightarrow_d [\tilde{\phi}'_{r_1+1}, \dots, \tilde{\phi}'_{r_o}] \quad (10.79)$$

where  $\tilde{\phi}'_j$  ( $j = r_1 + 1, \dots, r_o$ ) are the ordered solutions of

$$\left| uI_{r_o-r_1} - \tilde{\beta}'_\perp \mathcal{N}_1 \tilde{\beta}_\perp \right| = 0. \quad (10.80)$$

**Proof of Lemma 10.4.** (a). By definition,

$$\begin{aligned} \left(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1\right) Q^{-1} &= \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right)^{-1} - Q^{-1} H_o \\ &= \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right)^{-1} - [\Sigma_{uz_1}(1) \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1}, 0_{m \times (m-r_o)}] \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
&= \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} - n [\Sigma_{uz_1}(1), 0_{m \times (m-r_o)}] \right] \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right)^{-1} \\
&\quad + [\Sigma_{uz_1}(1), 0_{m \times (m-r_o)}] \left[ n \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right)^{-1} - \begin{pmatrix} \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right].
\end{aligned} \tag{10.81}$$

By Lemma 10.3, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
&\left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} - n [\Sigma_{uz_1}(1), 0_{m \times (m-r_o)}] \right] \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right)^{-1} D_n^{-1} \\
&= \left( n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n (u_t Z'_{1,t-1} - \Sigma_{uz_1}(1)), n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{2,t-1} \right) \left( D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n \right)^{-1} \\
&= O_p(1).
\end{aligned} \tag{10.82}$$

Similarly, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
&[\Sigma_{uz_1}(1), 0_{m \times (m-r_o)}] \left[ n \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right)^{-1} - \begin{pmatrix} \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right] D_n^{-1} \\
&= [\Sigma_{uz_1}(1), 0_{m \times (m-r_o)}] \left[ n D_n \begin{pmatrix} \hat{S}_{11} & n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \hat{S}_{12} \\ n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \hat{S}_{21} & n^{-1} \hat{S}_{22} \end{pmatrix}^{-1} D_n - \begin{pmatrix} \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right] D_n^{-1} \\
&= \Sigma_{uz_1}(1) \left( n^{\frac{1}{2}} \left[ (\hat{S}_{11} - \hat{S}_{12} \hat{S}_{22}^{-1} \hat{S}_{21})^{-1} - \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \right] - \hat{S}_{11}^{-1} \hat{S}_{12} \left( \frac{\hat{S}_{22}}{n} - \frac{\hat{S}_{21} \hat{S}_{11}^{-1} \hat{S}_{12}}{n} \right)^{-1} \right) \\
&= O_p(1).
\end{aligned} \tag{10.83}$$

Form the results in in (10.81), (10.82) and (10.83),

$$\left( \hat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} = O_p(1) \tag{10.84}$$

which finishes the proof.

(b). This result follows directly from (a) and the CMT.



(c). If we denote  $u_{n,k}^* = n\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})$ , then by definition,  $u_{n,k}^*$  ( $k \in \{r_o + 1, \dots, m\}$ ) is the solution of the following determinantal equation

$$0 = \left| \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \right| \times \left| \widetilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \left[ S_n(u) - S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \right] \widetilde{\beta}_{1\perp} \right|, \quad (10.85)$$

where  $S_n(u) = \frac{u}{n} I_m - \widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ .

From the results in (a), we have

$$\widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 = n^{-1} u \widetilde{\beta}'_1 \widetilde{\beta}_1 - \widetilde{\beta}'_1 \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \widetilde{\beta}_1 \rightarrow_p -\widetilde{\beta}'_1 \widetilde{\alpha}_1 \widetilde{\beta}'_1 \widetilde{\beta}_1, \quad (10.86)$$

where  $\widetilde{\beta}'_1 \widetilde{\alpha}_1 \widetilde{\beta}'_1 \widetilde{\beta}_1$  is a  $r_1 \times r_1$  nonsingular matrix. Hence  $u_{n,k}^*$  is the solution of the following determinantal equation asymptotically

$$0 = \left| \widetilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \left[ S_n(u) - S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \right] \widetilde{\beta}_{1\perp} \right|. \quad (10.87)$$

Denote  $T_n(u) = S_n(u) - S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u)$ , then (10.87) can be equivalently written as

$$0 = \left| \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} T_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right| \times \left| \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ T_n(u) - T_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} \left[ \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} T_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right]^{-1} \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} T_n(u) \right] \beta_{o\perp} \right|. \quad (10.88)$$

By  $\Pi_1 \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} = 0$ ,  $\widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \widetilde{\alpha}_1 = 0$  and the result in (a), we have

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} = -n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} + o_p(1), \quad (10.89)$$

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 = -n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \widetilde{\beta}_1 = O_p(1), \quad (10.90)$$

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} = -n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\beta}'_1 \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} = O_p(1). \quad (10.91)$$

From (10.86), (10.89), (10.90) and (10.91), we get

$$\begin{aligned} n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} T_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} &= n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} - \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \left[ n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right] \\ &= -\widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \left[ \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \right] n^{\frac{1}{2}} D_n Q \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} + o_p(1). \end{aligned} \quad (10.92)$$

Using the expressions in (10.81), we get

$$\begin{aligned}
& \left[ \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \right] n^{\frac{1}{2}} D_n Q \\
= & \left[ \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} \right] \begin{pmatrix} \beta'_o \\ \mathbf{0}_{(m-r_o) \times m} \end{pmatrix} + o_p(1) \\
= & \left[ n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{1,t-1} \widehat{S}_{11}^{-1} - n^{\frac{1}{2}} \Sigma_{uz_1}(1) \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \right] \beta'_o + o_p(1) \\
= & \left[ n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t Z'_{1,t-1} - \Sigma_{uz_1}(1)] \widehat{S}_{11}^{-1} + \Sigma_{uz_1}(1) n^{\frac{1}{2}} \left( \widehat{S}_{11}^{-1} - \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \right) \right] \beta'_o + o_p(1),
\end{aligned} \tag{10.93}$$

where

$$n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t Z'_{1,t-1} - \Sigma_{uz_1}(1)] \widehat{S}_{11}^{-1} \beta'_o \rightarrow_d N(0, V_{uz_1}) \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \beta'_o \equiv \mathcal{N}_{1,1} \tag{10.94}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}
& \Sigma_{uz_1}(1) n^{\frac{1}{2}} \left( \widehat{S}_{11}^{-1} - \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \right) \beta'_o \\
= & -\Sigma_{uz_1}(1) \widehat{S}_{11}^{-1} \left[ n^{\frac{1}{2}} \left( \widehat{S}_{11} - \Sigma_{z_1 z_1} \right) \right] \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \beta'_o \\
\rightarrow_d & \Sigma_{uz_1}(1) \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} N(0, V_{z_1 z_1}) \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \beta'_o \equiv \mathcal{N}_{1,2}.
\end{aligned} \tag{10.95}$$

From (10.92)-(10.95), we can deduce that

$$\left| \sqrt{n} \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} T_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right| \rightarrow_d \left| \widetilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \mathcal{N}_1 \widetilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right| \neq 0, \text{ a.e.} \tag{10.96}$$

where  $\mathcal{N}_1 = \mathcal{N}_{1,1} + \mathcal{N}_{1,2}$ .

Under (10.86) and the result in (a),

$$\begin{aligned}
n \beta'_{o\perp} T_n(u) \beta_{o\perp} &= n \beta'_{o\perp} S_n(u) \beta_{o\perp} - n \beta'_{o\perp} S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \beta_{o\perp} \\
&= u I_{m-r_o} - n \beta'_{o\perp} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \beta_{o\perp} - n \beta'_{o\perp} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \widetilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \widetilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \widetilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \widetilde{\beta}'_1 \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \beta_{o\perp} \\
&= u I_{m-r_o} - \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ n \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \right] \beta_{o\perp} + o_p(1)
\end{aligned} \tag{10.97}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}
n\tilde{\beta}'_{\perp}T_n(u)\beta_{o\perp} &= n\tilde{\beta}'_{\perp}S_n(u)\beta_{o\perp} - n\tilde{\beta}'_{\perp}S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u)\beta_{o\perp} \\
&= n\tilde{\beta}'_{\perp}\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}\beta_{o\perp} - n\tilde{\beta}'_{\perp}\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}\tilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_1 \widehat{\Pi}_{1st}\beta_{o\perp} \\
&= -\tilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \left[ n \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \right] \beta_{o\perp} + o_p(1)
\end{aligned} \tag{10.98}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}
n^{\frac{1}{2}}\beta'_{o\perp}T_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_{\perp} &= n^{\frac{1}{2}}\beta'_{o\perp}S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_{\perp} - n^{\frac{1}{2}}\beta'_{o\perp}S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \\
&= -\beta'_{o\perp} \left[ n^{\frac{1}{2}} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \right] \tilde{\beta}_{\perp} + o_p(1).
\end{aligned} \tag{10.99}$$

By (10.96), (10.97), (10.98) and (10.99), we have

$$\begin{aligned}
&n\beta'_{o\perp} \left[ T_n(u) - T_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_{\perp}T_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_{\perp}T_n(u) \right] \beta_{o\perp} \\
&= n\beta'_{o\perp}T_n(u)\beta_{o\perp} - \sqrt{n}\beta'_{o\perp}T_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \left[ \sqrt{n}\tilde{\beta}'_{\perp}T_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right]^{-1} n\tilde{\beta}'_{\perp}T_n(u)\beta_{o\perp} \\
&= uI_{m-r_o} - \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ n \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \right] \beta_{o\perp} + o_p(1) \\
&\quad - \beta'_{o\perp} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_{\perp}T_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \left[ n \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \right] \beta_{o\perp}.
\end{aligned} \tag{10.100}$$

Using the expressions in (10.81), we can deduce that

$$\begin{aligned}
n \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \beta_{o\perp} &= \left[ \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) Q^{-1} \right] \begin{pmatrix} 0 \\ n\alpha'_{o\perp}\beta_{o\perp} \end{pmatrix} \\
&= \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right)^{-1} \begin{pmatrix} 0 \\ n\alpha'_{o\perp}\beta_{o\perp} \end{pmatrix} \\
&= \left( n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{2,t-1} \right) \left( n^{-1} \widehat{S}_{22} \right)^{-1} \alpha'_{o\perp}\beta_{o\perp} + o_p(1) \\
&\rightarrow_d \mathcal{N}_2 \beta_{o\perp},
\end{aligned} \tag{10.101}$$

where  $\mathcal{N}_2 = \left[ \int dB_u B'_u + (\Gamma_{uu} - \Sigma_{uu}) \right] \alpha_{o\perp} \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} \alpha'_{o\perp}$ .

From (10.100) and (10.101), we deduce that

$$\begin{aligned} & \left| n\beta'_{o\perp} \left[ T_n(u) - T_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_\perp \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_\perp T_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_\perp \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_\perp T_n(u) \right] \beta_{o\perp} \right| \\ & \rightarrow_d \left| uI_{m-r_o} - \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ \mathcal{N}_2 + \mathcal{N}_1\tilde{\beta}_\perp \left( \tilde{\beta}'_\perp \mathcal{N}_1\tilde{\beta}_\perp \right)^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_\perp \mathcal{N}_2 \right] \beta_{o\perp} \right|. \end{aligned} \quad (10.102)$$

Now, the results in (c) follow from (10.102) and the CMT.

(d) If we denote  $u_{n,k}^* = \sqrt{n}\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})$ , then by definition,  $u_{n,k}^*$  ( $k \in \{r_1 + 1, \dots, r_o\}$ ) is the solution of the following determinantal equation

$$0 = \left| \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \tilde{\beta}_1 \right| \times \left| \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \left\{ S_n(u) - S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \right\} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} \right|, \quad (10.103)$$

where  $S_n(u) = \frac{u}{\sqrt{n}}I_m - \widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ .

Note that

$$\tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} S_n(u) \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} = n^{-\frac{1}{2}} u \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} - \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp}, \quad (10.104)$$

$$\tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} S_n(u) \tilde{\beta}_1 = -\tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \tilde{\beta}_1 \text{ and } \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} = -\tilde{\beta}'_1 \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp}. \quad (10.105)$$

Using expressions in (10.104), (10.105) and the result in (a), we have

$$\begin{aligned} & n^{\frac{1}{2}} \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \left\{ S_n(u) - S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \right\} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} \\ & = u \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} - n^{\frac{1}{2}} \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} - n^{\frac{1}{2}} \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \tilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u)\tilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_1 \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} \\ & = uI_{m-r_1} - n^{\frac{1}{2}} \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} + o_p(1). \end{aligned} \quad (10.106)$$

From (a), we get

$$\sqrt{n} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \beta_{o,\perp} = o_p(1). \quad (10.107)$$

As a result,

$$\begin{aligned} \sqrt{n} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} & = \sqrt{n} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \left( \tilde{\beta}_\perp, \beta_{o\perp} \right) \\ & = \left[ \sqrt{n} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \tilde{\beta}_\perp, \sqrt{n} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \beta_{o\perp} \right] \\ & = \left[ \sqrt{n} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \tilde{\beta}_\perp, \mathbf{0}_{m \times (m-r_o)} \right] + o_p(1) \end{aligned} \quad (10.108)$$

and

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}} \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} = \begin{pmatrix} \sqrt{n} \tilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \tilde{\beta}_{\perp} & 0 \\ \sqrt{n} \beta'_{o,\perp} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \tilde{\beta}_{\perp} & \mathbf{0}_{m-r_o} \end{pmatrix} + o_p(1). \quad (10.109)$$

Using (10.106) and (10.109), we have

$$\begin{aligned} & n^{\frac{1}{2}} \left| \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \left\{ S_n(u) - S_n(u) \tilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \tilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \right\} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} \right| \\ &= \left| u \beta'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp} \right| \times \left| u I_{r_o-r_1} - n^{\frac{1}{2}} \tilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) \tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right| + o_p(1). \end{aligned} \quad (10.110)$$

Using the expressions in (10.81), we can deduce that

$$\begin{aligned} n^{\frac{1}{2}} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) &= n^{\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right)^{-1} Q - n^{\frac{1}{2}} \Sigma_{uz_1}(1) \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \beta'_o \\ &= \left[ n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{1,t-1} \widehat{S}_{11}^{-1} - n^{\frac{1}{2}} \Sigma_{uz_1}(1) \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \right] \beta'_o + o_p(1) \\ &\rightarrow_d \mathcal{N}_{1,1} + \mathcal{N}_{1,2} \equiv \mathcal{N}_1, \end{aligned} \quad (10.111)$$

where  $\mathcal{N}_{1,1}$  and  $\mathcal{N}_{1,2}$  are defined in (10.94) and (10.95) respectively. From (10.110) and (10.111), we can deduce that

$$\begin{aligned} & \left| \sqrt{n} \tilde{\beta}'_{1\perp} \left\{ S_n(u) - S_n(u) \tilde{\beta}_1 \left[ \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \tilde{\beta}_1 \right]^{-1} \tilde{\beta}'_1 S_n(u) \right\} \tilde{\beta}_{1\perp} \right| \\ &\rightarrow_d \left| u I_{m-r_0} \right| \times \left| u I_{r_o-r_1} - \tilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \mathcal{N}_1 \tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right|. \end{aligned} \quad (10.112)$$

Note that the determinantal equation

$$\left| u I_{m-r_0} \right| \times \left| u I_{r_o-r_1} - \tilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \mathcal{N}_1 \tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right| = 0 \quad (10.113)$$

has  $m - r_0$  zero eigenvalues, which correspond to the probability limit of  $\sqrt{n} \phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})$  ( $k \in \{r_1 + 1, \dots, r_o\}$ ), as illustrated in (c). Equation (10.113) also has  $r_o - r_1$  non-trivial eigenvalues as solutions of the stochastic determinantal equation

$$\left| u I_{r_o-r_1} - \tilde{\beta}'_{\perp} \mathcal{N}_1 \tilde{\beta}_{\perp} \right| = 0,$$

which finishes the proof. ■

Recall that  $P_n$  is defined as the inverse of  $Q_n$ . We divide  $P_n$  and  $Q_n$  as  $P_n = [P_{\tilde{\alpha},n}, P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n}]$  and  $Q_n' = [Q_{\tilde{\alpha},n}', Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n}']$ , where  $Q_{\tilde{\alpha},n}$  and  $P_{\tilde{\alpha},n}$  are the first  $r_1$  rows of  $Q_n$  and first  $r_1$  columns of  $P_n$  respectively ( $Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n}$  and  $P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n}$  are defined accordingly). By definition,

$$Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} = I_{m-r_1}, \quad Q_{\tilde{\alpha},n} P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} = \mathbf{0}_{r_1 \times (m-r_1)} \quad \text{and} \quad Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} = \Lambda_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \quad (10.114)$$

where  $\Lambda_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n}$  is an diagonal matrix with the ordered last (smallest)  $m - r_1$  eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ . Using the results in (10.114), we can define a useful estimator of  $\Pi_1$  as

$$\tilde{\Pi}_{n,f} = \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \Lambda_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n}. \quad (10.115)$$

By definition

$$Q_{\tilde{\alpha},n} \tilde{\Pi}_{n,f} = Q_{\tilde{\alpha},n} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - Q_{\tilde{\alpha},n} P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \Lambda_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} = \Lambda_{\tilde{\alpha},n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha},n} \quad (10.116)$$

where  $\Lambda_{\tilde{\alpha},n}$  is an diagonal matrix with the ordered first (largest)  $r_o$  eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ , and more importantly

$$Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \tilde{\Pi}_{n,f} = Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \Lambda_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} = \mathbf{0}_{(m-r_1) \times m}. \quad (10.117)$$

From Lemma 10.4.(b), (10.116) and (10.117), we can deduce that  $Q_{\tilde{\alpha},n} \tilde{\Pi}_{n,f}$  is a  $r_1 \times m$  matrix which is nonzero w.p.a.1 and  $Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \tilde{\Pi}_{n,f}$  is a  $(m - r_1) \times m$  zero matrix for all  $n$ . Using (10.114), we can write

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \Pi_1 &= (\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1) - P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \Lambda_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \\ &= (\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1) - P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} (\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1) - P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp,n} \Pi_1 \end{aligned} \quad (10.118)$$

where Lemma 10.4.(a),

$$\left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} = O_p(1) \quad (10.119)$$

and by Lemma 10.4.(a), (c) and (d)

$$\begin{aligned}
P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} \Pi_1 Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} &= \sqrt{n} P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} \Pi_1 Q^{-1} \\
&= -\sqrt{n} P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} \left( \hat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1 \right) Q^{-1} + \sqrt{n} P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} \hat{\Pi}_{1st} Q^{-1} \\
&= \sqrt{n} P_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} \Lambda_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} Q_{\tilde{\alpha}_\perp, n} Q^{-1} + O_p(1) = O_p(1). \tag{10.120}
\end{aligned}$$

Thus under (10.118), (10.119) and (10.120), we get

$$\left( \tilde{\Pi}_{n, f} - \Pi_1 \right) Q^{-1} D_n^{-1} = O_p(1). \tag{10.121}$$

Comparing (10.119) with (10.121), we see that  $\tilde{\Pi}_{n, f}$  is as good as the OLS estimate  $\hat{\Pi}_{1st}$  in terms of its rate of convergence.

**Proof of Corollary 4.1.** First, when  $r_o = 0$ , then  $\Pi_1 = \tilde{\alpha}_o \beta_o' = 0 = \Pi_o$ . Hence, the consistency of  $\hat{\Pi}_n$  follows by the similar arguments to those in the proof of Theorem 3.1. To finish the proof, we only need to consider the scenarios where  $r_o = m$  and  $r_o \in (0, m)$ .

Using the same notation for  $V_n(\cdot)$  defined in the proof of Theorem 3.1, by definition we have  $V_n(\hat{\Pi}_n) \leq V_n(\tilde{\Pi}_{n, f})$ , which implies

$$\begin{aligned}
&\left[ \text{vec}(\tilde{\Pi}_{n, f} - \hat{\Pi}_n) \right]' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}' \otimes I_m \right) \left[ \text{vec}(\tilde{\Pi}_{n, f} - \hat{\Pi}_n) \right] \\
&+ 2 \left[ \text{vec}(\tilde{\Pi}_{n, f} - \hat{\Pi}_n) \right]' \text{vec} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y_{t-1}' - (\Pi_1 - \Pi_o) \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}' \right] \\
&- 2 \left[ \text{vec}(\tilde{\Pi}_{n, f} - \hat{\Pi}_n) \right]' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}' \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec}(\tilde{\Pi}_{n, f} - \Pi_1) \\
&\leq n \left\{ \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r, k, n} \left[ \|\Phi_{n, k}(\tilde{\Pi}_{n, f})\| - \|\Phi_{n, k}(\hat{\Pi}_n)\| \right] \right\}. \tag{10.122}
\end{aligned}$$

When  $r_o = m$ ,  $Y_t$  is stationary and we have

$$\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}' \rightarrow_p \Sigma_{yy} = R(1) \Omega_u R(1)'. \tag{10.123}$$

From the results in (10.122) and (10.123), we get w.p.a.1,

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f}\| - \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f}\| (c_{1n} + c_{2n}) - d_n \leq 0, \quad (10.124)$$

where  $\mu_{n,\min}$  denotes the smallest eigenvalue of  $\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1}$ , which is positive w.p.a.1,

$$\begin{aligned} c_{1n} &= \left\| \frac{\sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y'_{t-1}}{n} - (\Pi_1 - \Pi_o) \frac{\sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1}}{n} \right\| \\ &\rightarrow_p \|\Sigma_{uy}(1) - \Sigma_{uy}(1) \Sigma_{yy}^{-1} \Sigma_{yy}\| = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (10.125)$$

by Lemma 10.3 and the definition of  $\Pi_1$ , and

$$c_{2n} = m \left\| n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \right\| \|\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \Pi_1\| = o_p(1) \quad (10.126)$$

by Lemma 10.3 and (10.121), and

$$d_n = \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\widehat{\Pi}_n)\| \right] \leq \sum_{k=1}^{r_1} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})\| = o_p(1) \quad (10.127)$$

by Lemma 10.4, (10.117) and  $\lambda_{r,k,n} = o_p(1)$  for  $k = 1, \dots, r_1$ . So the consistency of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  follows directly from (10.121), the inequality in (10.124) and the triangle inequality.

When  $0 < r_o < m$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} & \text{vec}(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec}(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f}) \\ &= \text{vec}(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})' \left( B_n D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n B'_n \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec}(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f}) \\ &\geq \mu_{n,\min} \|(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f}) B_n\|^2 \end{aligned} \quad (10.128)$$



where  $\mu_{n,\min}$  denotes the smallest eigenvalue of  $D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n$  which is positive definite w.p.a.1 under Lemma 10.3. Next, note that

$$\begin{aligned} & \left\{ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} - [(\Pi_1 - \Pi_o)Q^{-1}] \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right\} D_n \\ &= \begin{bmatrix} n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{1,t-1} u'_t \\ n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{2,t-1} u'_t \end{bmatrix}' - \begin{bmatrix} n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{1,t-1} Z'_{1,t-1} \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \Sigma'_{u z_1}(1) \\ n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{2,t-1} Z'_{1,t-1} \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \Sigma'_{u z_1}(1) \end{bmatrix}'. \end{aligned} \quad (10.129)$$

From Lemma 10.3, we can deduce that

$$n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{2,t-1} u'_t = O_p(1) \text{ and } n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{2,t-1} Z'_{1,t-1} \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \Sigma'_{u z_1}(1) = O_p(1). \quad (10.130)$$

Similarly, we get

$$n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n [Z_{1,t-1} u'_t - \Sigma'_{u z_1}(1)] - n^{\frac{1}{2}} [S_{n,11} - \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}] \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \Sigma'_{u z_1}(1) = O_p(1). \quad (10.131)$$

Define  $e_{1n} = \left\| \left\{ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} - (\Pi_1 - \Pi_o)Q^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right\} D_n \right\|$ , then from (10.129)-(10.131) we can deduce that  $e_{1n} = O_p(1)$ . By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality, we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \left| \text{vec}(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})' \text{vec} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y'_{t-1} - (\Pi_1 - \Pi_o) \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \right] \right| \\ &= \left| \text{vec}(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})' \text{vec} \left[ \left\{ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} - (\Pi_1 - \Pi_o)Q^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right\} D_n B'_n \right] \right| \\ &\leq \|(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})B_n\| e_{1n}. \end{aligned} \quad (10.132)$$

Under Lemma 10.3 and (10.121),

$$\begin{aligned} e_{2n} &\equiv \left| \text{vec}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \Pi_1) \right| \\ &= \left| \text{vec}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n)' \left( B_n D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n B'_n \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \Pi_1) \right| \\ &\leq \|(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})B_n\| \times \|(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \Pi_1)B_n\| \times \|D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z'_{t-1} D_n\| = O_p(1). \end{aligned} \quad (10.133)$$

From results in (10.122), (10.132) and (10.133), we get w.p.a.1

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})B_n\|^2 - 2\|(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})B_n\|^2(e_{1n} + e_{2n}) - d_n \leq 0 \quad (10.134)$$

where  $d_n = o_p(1)$  by (10.127). Now, the consistency of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  follows by (10.134) and the same arguments in Theorem 3.1. ■

**Proof of Corollary 4.2.** From Lemma 10.4 and Corollary 4.1, we deduce that w.p.a.1

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\widehat{\Pi}_n)\| \right] \\ & \leq \sum_{k \in \widetilde{\mathcal{S}}_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f})\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\widehat{\Pi}_n)\| \right] \\ & \leq d_{\widetilde{\mathcal{S}}_\phi} \max_{k \in \widetilde{\mathcal{S}}_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f}\|. \end{aligned} \quad (10.135)$$

Using (10.122) and (10.135), we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \left[ \text{vec}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) \right]' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \otimes I_m \right) \left[ \text{vec}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) \right] \\ & + 2 \left[ \text{vec}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) \right]' \text{vec} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y'_{t-1} - (\Pi_1 - \Pi_o) \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \right] \\ & - 2 \left[ \text{vec}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) \right]' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \otimes I_m \right) \text{vec}(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \Pi_1) \\ & \leq c \max_{k \in \widetilde{\mathcal{S}}_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f}\| \end{aligned} \quad (10.136)$$

where  $c > 0$  is a generic positive constant. When  $r_o = 0$ , the convergence rate of  $\widehat{\Pi}_n$  could be derived using the same arguments in Theorem 3.2. Hence, to finish the proof, we only need to consider scenarios where  $r_o = m$  or  $0 < r_o < m$ .

When  $r_o = m$ , following similar arguments to those of Theorem 3.2, we get

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n\|^2 - c \|\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n\| \left( c_{1n} + c_{2n} + \widetilde{\delta}_{r,n} \right) \leq 0, \quad (10.137)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned}
c_{1n} &= \left\| n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y'_{t-1} - n^{-1} (\Pi_1 - \Pi_o) \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \right\| \\
&= n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \left\| n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t Y'_{t-1} - \Sigma_{uy}(1)] - \Sigma_{uy}(1) \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}^{-1} \left[ n^{\frac{1}{2}} (\widehat{S}_{11} - \Sigma_{z_1 z_1}) \right] \right\| \\
&= O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}}) \tag{10.138}
\end{aligned}$$

by Lemma 10.3, and

$$c_{2n} = \left\| n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y'_{t-1} \right\| \left\| \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \Pi_1 \right\| = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}}) \tag{10.139}$$

by Lemma 10.3 and 10.121. From the results in (10.121), (10.137), (10.138) and (10.139), we deduce that

$$\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_1 = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}} + \widetilde{\delta}_{r,n}). \tag{10.140}$$

When  $0 < r_o < m$ , we can use (10.132) and (10.133) in the proof of Corollary 4.1 and (10.136) and to get w.p.a.1

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) B_n\|^2 - 2 \|(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) B_n\| (e_{1,n} + e_{2,n}) \leq cn \delta_n \| \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n \|, \tag{10.141}$$

where  $e_{1,n} = O_p(1)$  and  $e_{2,n} = O_p(1)$  as illustrated in the proof of Corollary 4.1. By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality,

$$\|(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) B_n B_n^{-1}\| \leq cn^{-\frac{1}{2}} \|(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) B_n\|. \tag{10.142}$$

Using (10.141) and (10.142), we obtain

$$\mu_{n,\min} \|(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) B_n\|^2 - c \|(\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \widehat{\Pi}_n) B_n\| (e_{1,n} + e_{2,n} + n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\delta}_{r,n}) \leq 0. \tag{10.143}$$

From (10.121) and the inequality in (10.143), we obtain

$$(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_1) B_n = (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f}) B_n + (\widetilde{\Pi}_{n,f} - \Pi_1) B_n = O_p(1 + n^{\frac{1}{2}} \widetilde{\delta}_{r,n}),$$

which finishes the proof. ■

**Proof of Corollary 4.3.** Using similar arguments in the proof of Theorem 3.3, we can rewrite the LS shrinkage estimation problem as

$$\widehat{T}_n = \arg \min_{T \in R^{m \times m}} \sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - P_n T Y_{t-1}\|^2 + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|T(k)\|. \quad (10.144)$$

Result in (4.6) is equivalent to  $\widehat{T}_n(k) = 0$  for any  $k \in \{r_o + 1, \dots, m\}$ . Conditional on the event  $\{Q_n(k_o)\widehat{\Pi}_n \neq 0\}$  for some  $k_o$  satisfying  $r_o < k_o \leq m$ , we get the following equation from the KKT optimality conditions,

$$\left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - P_n \widehat{T}_n Y_{t-1})' P_n(k_o) Y_{t-1}' \right\| = \frac{\lambda_{r,k_o,n}}{2}. \quad (10.145)$$

The sample average in the left hand side of (10.145) can be rewritten as

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{\sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - P_n \widehat{T}_n Y_{t-1})' P_n(k_o) Y_{t-1}'}{n} = \frac{P_n'(k_o) \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t - (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o) Y_{t-1}] Y_{t-1}'}{n} \\ & = \frac{P_n'(k_o)}{n} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t - (\Pi_1 - \Pi_o) Y_{t-1}] Y_{t-1}' - (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_1) \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}' \right]. \end{aligned} \quad (10.146)$$

From the results in (10.129), (10.130) and (10.131),

$$\frac{P_n'(k_o) \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t - (\Pi_1 - \Pi_o) Y_{t-1}] Y_{t-1}'}{n} = O_p(1). \quad (10.147)$$

From Corollary 4.2 and Lemma 10.3,

$$\frac{(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_1) \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}'}{n} = \frac{(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_1) B_n D_n \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z_{t-1}' Q^{l-1}}{n} = O_p(1). \quad (10.148)$$

Using the results in (10.146), (10.147) and (10.148), we deduce that

$$\left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - P_n \widehat{T}_n Y_{t-1})' P_n(k_o) Y_{t-1}' \right\| = O_p(1). \quad (10.149)$$

While by the assumption on the tuning parameters,  $\lambda_{r,k_o,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$ , which together with the results in (10.145) and (10.149) implies that

$$\Pr \left( Q_n(k_o) \widehat{\Pi}_n = 0 \right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty.$$

As the above result holds for any  $k_o$  such that  $r_o < k_o \leq m$ , this finishes the proof. ■

Let  $P_{r_o,n}$  and  $Q_{r_o,n}$  be the first  $r_o$  columns of  $P_n$  and the first  $r_o$  rows of  $Q_n$  respectively. Let  $P_{r_o-r_1,n}$  and  $Q_{r_o-r_1,n}$  be the last  $r_o - r_1$  columns of  $P_{r_o,n}$  and the last  $r_o - r_1$  rows of  $Q_{r_o,n}$  respectively. Under Lemma 10.4.(c),

$$\begin{aligned}
Q_{r_o-r_1,n} \widehat{\Pi}_n B_n &= Q_{r_o-r_1,n} (\widehat{\Pi}_n - \widehat{\Pi}_{1st}) B_n + Q_{r_o-r_1,n} (\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_1) B_n + Q_{r_o-r_1,n} \Pi_1 B_n \\
&= \sqrt{n} Q_{r_o-r_1,n} \Pi_1 Q^{-1} + O_p(1) \\
&= \sqrt{n} Q_{r_o-r_1,n} (\Pi_1 - \widehat{\Pi}_{1st}) Q^{-1} + \sqrt{n} Q_{r_o-r_1,n} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} Q^{-1} + O_p(1) \\
&= \sqrt{n} \Lambda_{r_o-r_1,n} Q_{r_o-r_1,n} Q^{-1} + O_p(1) = O_p(1)
\end{aligned} \tag{10.150}$$

where  $\Lambda_{r_o-r_1,n}$  is a diagonal matrix with the  $(r_1 + 1)$ -th to the  $r_o$ -th eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ . Let  $\widehat{T}_{\alpha,n}$  be the first  $r_o$  rows of  $\widehat{T}_n = Q_n \widehat{\Pi}_n$ , then  $\widehat{T}_{\alpha,n} = Q_{r_o,n} \widehat{\Pi}_n$ . Define  $T'_{\alpha,n} = [\Pi'_1 Q'_{\alpha,n}, \mathbf{0}_{m \times (r_o-r_1)}]$ , then

$$\left( \widehat{T}_{\alpha,n} - T_{\alpha,n} \right) B_n = \begin{bmatrix} Q_{\alpha,n} \left( \widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_1 \right) B_n \\ Q_{r_o-r_1,n} \widehat{\Pi}_n B_n \end{bmatrix} = O_p(1) \tag{10.151}$$

where the last equality is by Corollary 4.2 and (10.150).

**Proof of Corollary 4.4.** Using the results of Corollary 4.3, we can rewrite the LS shrinkage estimation problem as

$$\widehat{T}_n = \arg \min_{T \in R^{m \times m}} \sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - P_n T Y_{t-1}\|^2 + n \sum_{k=1}^{r_o} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|T(k)\| \tag{10.152}$$

with the constraint  $T(k) = 0$  for  $k = r_o + 1, \dots, m$ . Recall that  $\widehat{T}_{\alpha,n}$  is the first  $r_o$  rows of  $\widehat{T}_n$ , then the problem in (10.152) can be rewritten as

$$\widehat{T}_{\alpha,n} = \arg \min_{T_{\alpha} \in R^{r_o \times m}} \sum_{t=1}^n \|\Delta Y_t - P_{r_o,n} T_{\alpha} Y_{t-1}\|^2 + n \sum_{k=1}^{r_o} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|T_{\alpha}(k)\| \tag{10.153}$$

where  $P_{r_o,n}$  is the first  $r_o$  columns of  $P_n$ .

Let  $u_n^* = (\widehat{T}_{\alpha,n} - T_{\alpha,n})B_n$  and note that the last  $r_o - r_1$  rows of  $T_{\alpha,n}$  are zeros. By definition,  $u_n^*$  is the minimizer of

$$\begin{aligned} V_n(U) &= \sum_{t=1}^n \left[ \|\Delta Y_t - P_{r_o,n}(UB_n^{-1} + T_{\alpha,n})Y_{t-1}\|^2 - \|\Delta Y_t - P_{r_o,n}T_{\alpha,n}Y_{t-1}\|^2 \right] \\ &\quad + n \sum_{k=1}^{r_o} \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|UB_n^{-1} + T_{\alpha,n}(k)\| - \|T_{\alpha,n}(k)\| \right] \\ &= V_{1,n}(U) + n \sum_{k=1}^{r_o} \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|UB_n^{-1} + T_{\alpha,n}(k)\| - \|T_{\alpha,n}(k)\| \right]. \end{aligned}$$

For any  $U$  in some compact subset of  $R^{r_o \times m}$ ,  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}UD_nQ = O(1)$ . Thus  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\widetilde{\delta}_{r,n} = o_p(1)$  and Lemma 10.4.d imply that

$$n\lambda_{r,k,n} \left| \| (UB_n^{-1} + T_{\alpha,n})(k_o) \| - \| T_{\alpha,n}(k_o) \| \right| \leq n^{\frac{1}{2}}\lambda_{r,k,n} \left\| n^{\frac{1}{2}}(UB_n^{-1})(k_o) \right\| = o_p(1) \quad (10.154)$$

for  $k_o = 1, \dots, r_1$ . On the other hand,  $n^{\frac{1}{2}}\lambda_{r,k,n} = o_p(1)$  implies that

$$n\lambda_{r,k,n} \left| \| (UB_n^{-1} + T_{\alpha,n})(k_o) \| - \| T_{\alpha,n}(k_o) \| \right| \leq n^{\frac{1}{2}}\lambda_{r,k,n} \left\| n^{\frac{1}{2}}(UB_n^{-1})(k_o) \right\| = o_p(1) \quad (10.155)$$

for any  $k_o = 1, \dots, r_o$ . Moreover, we can rewrite  $V_{1,n}(U)$  as

$$V_{1,n}(U) = A_{n,t}(U) - 2B_{n,t}(U)$$

where

$$A_{n,t}(U) \equiv \text{vec}(U)' \left( B_n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1}Y_{t-1}'B_n^{-1} \otimes P'_{r_o,n}P_{r_o,n} \right) \text{vec}(U)$$

and

$$B_{n,t}(U) \equiv \text{vec}(U)' \text{vec} \left[ P'_{r_o,n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - P_{r_o,n}T_{\alpha,n}Y_{t-1}) Y_{t-1}' B_n^{-1} \right].$$

It is clear that  $V_{1,n}(U)$  is minimized at

$$\begin{aligned} U_n^* &= (P'_{r_o,n}P_{r_o,n})^{-1}P'_{r_o,n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - P_{r_o,n}T_{\alpha,n}Y_{t-1}) Y_{t-1}' \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1}Y_{t-1}' \right)^{-1} B_n \\ &= \left[ (P'_{r_o,n}P_{r_o,n})^{-1}P'_{r_o,n} \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - T_{\alpha,n} \right] B_n. \end{aligned}$$

By definition,  $P_n = [P_{r_o,n}, P_{m-r_o,n}]$ , where  $P_{r_o,n}$  and  $P_{m-r_o,n}$  are the right normalized eigenvectors of the largest  $r_o$  and smallest  $m - r_o$  eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  respectively. From

Lemma 10.4.(c) and (d), we deduce that  $P'_{r_o,n}P_{m-r_o,n} = 0$  w.p.a.1. Thus, we can rewrite  $U_n^*$  as

$$U_n^* = \left[ (P'_{r_o,n}P_{r_o,n})^{-1}P'_{r_o,n}P_nQ_n\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - T_{\alpha,n} \right] B_n = \left( Q_{r_o,n}\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - T_{\alpha,n} \right) B_n$$

w.p.a.1. Results in (10.154) and (10.155) imply that  $u_n^* = U_n^* + o_p(1)$ . Thus the limiting distribution of the last  $r_o - r_1$  rows of  $u_n^*$  is identical to the limiting distribution of the last  $r_o - r_1$  rows of  $U_n^*$ . Let  $U_{r_o-r_1,n}^*$  be the last  $r_o - r_1$  rows of  $U_n^*$ , then by definition

$$Q_{r_o-r_1,n}\widehat{\Pi}_n B_n = U_{r_o-r_1,n}^* + o_p(1) = \Lambda_{r_o-r_1,n}Q_{r_o-r_1,n}B_n + o_p(1) \quad (10.156)$$

where  $\Lambda_{r_o-r_1,n} \equiv \text{diag} \left[ \phi_{r_1+1}(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}), \dots, \phi_{r_o}(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}) \right]$ . From (10.156) and Lemma 10.4, we obtain

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}}Q_{r_o-r_1,n}\widehat{\Pi}_n = n^{\frac{1}{2}}\Lambda_{r_o-r_1,n}Q_{r_o-r_1,n} + o_p(1) = \Lambda_{r_o-r_1}(\tilde{\phi}')Q_{r_o-r_1,o} + o_p(1) \quad (10.157)$$

where  $\Lambda_{r_o-r_1}(\tilde{\phi}') \equiv \text{diag}(\tilde{\phi}'_{r_1+1}, \dots, \tilde{\phi}'_{r_o})$  is a non-degenerated full rank random matrix, and  $Q_{r_o-r_1,o}$  denotes the probability limit of  $Q_{r_o-r_1,n}$  and it is a full rank matrix. From (10.157), we deduce that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sup \Pr \left( n^{\frac{1}{2}}Q_{r_o-r_1,n}\widehat{\Pi}_n = 0 \right) = 0$$

which finishes the proof. ■

## 10.4 Proof of Main Results in Section 5

**Lemma 10.5** *Under Assumption 3.1 and Assumption 5.1, we have*

- (a)  $n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{3,t-1}Z'_{3,t-1} \rightarrow_p \Sigma_{z_3z_3}$ ;
  - (b)  $n^{-\frac{3}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{3,t-1}Z'_{2,t-1} \rightarrow_p 0$ ;
  - (c)  $n^{-2} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{2,t-1}Z'_{2,t-1} \rightarrow_d \int B_{w_2}B'_{w_2}$ ;
  - (d)  $n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{3,t-1} \rightarrow_d N(0, \Omega_u \otimes \Sigma_{z_3z_3})$ ;
  - (e)  $n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{2,t-1} \rightarrow_d \left( \int B_{w_2}dB'_u \right)'$ ;
- and the quantities in (c), (d), and (e) converge jointly.

Lemma 10.5 follows by standard arguments like those in Lemma 10.1 and its proof is omitted. We next establish the asymptotic properties of the OLS estimator  $(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}, \widehat{B}_{1st})$  of  $(\Pi_o, B_o)$  and the asymptotic properties of the eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ . The estimate  $(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}, \widehat{B}_{1st})$

has the following closed-form solution

$$\left(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}, \widehat{B}_{1st}\right) = \left(\widehat{S}_{y_0y_1} \quad \widehat{S}_{y_0x_0}\right) \begin{pmatrix} \widehat{S}_{y_1y_1} & \widehat{S}_{y_1x_0} \\ \widehat{S}_{x_0y_1} & \widehat{S}_{x_0x_0} \end{pmatrix}^{-1}, \quad (10.158)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} \widehat{S}_{y_0y_1} &= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \Delta Y_t Y_{t-1}', & \widehat{S}_{y_0x_0} &= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \Delta Y_t \Delta X_{t-1}', \\ \widehat{S}_{y_1y_1} &= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} Y_{t-1}', & \widehat{S}_{y_1x_0} &= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n Y_{t-1} \Delta X_{t-1}', \\ \widehat{S}_{x_0y_1} &= \widehat{S}'_{y_1x_0} \text{ and } \widehat{S}_{x_0x_0} &= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \Delta X_{t-1} \Delta X_{t-1}'. \end{aligned} \quad (10.159)$$

Denote  $Y_- = (Y_0, \dots, Y_{n-1})_{m \times n}$ ,  $\Delta Y = (\Delta Y_1, \dots, \Delta Y_n)_{m \times n}$  and

$$\widehat{M}_0 = I_n - n^{-1} \Delta X' \widehat{S}_{x_0x_0}^{-1} \Delta X,$$

where  $\Delta X = (\Delta X_0, \dots, \Delta X_{n-1})_{mp \times n}$ , then  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  has the explicit partitioned regression representation

$$\widehat{\Pi}_{1st} = \left(\Delta Y \widehat{M}_0 Y_-'\right) \left(Y_- \widehat{M}_0 Y_-'\right)^{-1} = \Pi_o + \left(U \widehat{M}_0 Y_-'\right) \left(Y_- \widehat{M}_0 Y_-'\right)^{-1}, \quad (10.160)$$

where  $U = (u_1, \dots, u_n)_{m \times n}$ . Recall that  $[\phi_1(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}), \dots, \phi_m(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})]$  and  $[\phi_1(\Pi_o), \dots, \phi_m(\Pi_o)]$  are the ordered eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  and  $\Pi_o$  respectively, where  $\phi_j(\Pi_o) = 0$  ( $j = r_o + 1, \dots, m$ ). Let  $Q_n$  be the normalized left eigenvector matrix of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ .

**Lemma 10.6** *Suppose Assumption 3.1 and Assumption 5.1 hold.*

(a) *Recall  $D_{n,B} = \text{diag}(n^{-\frac{1}{2}} I_{r_o+mp}, n^{-1} I_{m-r_o})$ , then  $\left[(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}, \widehat{B}_{1st}) - (\Pi_o, B_o)\right] Q_B^{-1} D_{n,B}^{-1}$  has the following partitioned limit distribution*

$$\left[ N(0, \Omega_u \otimes \Sigma_{z_3 z_3}^{-1}), \int dB_u B_{w_2}' (\int B_{w_2} B_{w_2}')^{-1} \right]; \quad (10.161)$$

(b) *The eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  satisfy  $\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}) \rightarrow_p \phi_k(\Pi_o)$  for  $\forall k = 1, \dots, m$ ;*

(c) *For  $\forall k = r_o + 1, \dots, m$ , the eigenvalues  $\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})$  of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  satisfy Lemma 10.2.(c).*



Lemma 10.6 is useful, because the first step estimator  $(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}, \widehat{B}_{1st})$  and the eigenvalues of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  are used in the construction of the penalty function.

**Proof of Lemma 10.6.** (a). We start by defining  $\widehat{S}_{uy_1} = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y'_{t-1}$  and  $\widehat{S}_{ux_0} = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t \Delta X'_{t-1}$ . From the expression in (10.159), we get

$$\begin{aligned} & \left[ (\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}, \widehat{B}_{1st}) - (\Pi_o, B_o) \right] Q_B^{-1} D_{n,B}^{-1} \\ &= \begin{pmatrix} \widehat{S}_{uy_1} & \widehat{S}_{ux_0} \end{pmatrix} Q'_B D_{n,B} \left[ D_{n,B} Q_B \begin{pmatrix} \widehat{S}_{y_1 y_1} & \widehat{S}_{y_1 x_0} \\ \widehat{S}_{x_0 y_1} & \widehat{S}_{x_0 x_0} \end{pmatrix} Q'_B D_{n,B} \right]^{-1}. \end{aligned} \quad (10.162)$$

Note that

$$\begin{pmatrix} \widehat{S}_{uy_1} & \widehat{S}_{ux_0} \end{pmatrix} Q'_B D_{n,B} = U \left[ Q_B \begin{pmatrix} Y_- \\ \Delta X \end{pmatrix} \right]' D_{n,B} = \begin{pmatrix} n^{-\frac{1}{2}} U Z'_3 & n^{-1} U Z'_2 \end{pmatrix} \quad (10.163)$$

and

$$D_{n,B} Q_B \begin{pmatrix} \widehat{S}_{y_1 y_1} & \widehat{S}_{y_1 x_0} \\ \widehat{S}_{x_0 y_1} & \widehat{S}_{x_0 x_0} \end{pmatrix} Q'_B D_{n,B} = \begin{pmatrix} n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{3,t} Z'_{3,t} & n^{-\frac{3}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{3,t} Z'_{2,t} \\ n^{-\frac{3}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{2,t} Z'_{3,t} & n^{-2} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{2,t} Z'_{2,t} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (10.164)$$

where  $Z_3 = (Z_{3,0}, \dots, Z_{3,n-1})$  and  $Z_2 = (Z_{2,0}, \dots, Z_{2,n-1})$ . Now the result in (10.161) follows by applying Lemma 10.5.

(b). This result follows directly by the consistency of  $\widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$  and CMT.

(c). Define  $S_n(\phi) = \phi I_m - \widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ , then

$$|S_n(\phi)| = |\beta'_o S_n(\phi) \beta_o| \times \left| \beta'_{o\perp} \left\{ S_n(\phi) - S_n(\phi) \beta_o [\beta'_o S_n(\phi) \beta_o]^{-1} \beta'_o S_n(\phi) \right\} \beta_{o\perp} \right|. \quad (10.165)$$

Let  $\mu_k^* = n \phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})$  ( $k = r_o + 1, \dots, m$ ), using similar arguments in the proof of Lemma 10.2.(c), we deduce that  $\mu_k^*$  is a solution of the equation

$$0 = \left| \beta'_{o\perp} \left\{ S_n(\mu) - S_n(\mu) \beta_o [\beta'_o S_n(\mu) \beta_o]^{-1} \beta'_o S_n(\mu) \right\} \beta_{o\perp} \right|, \quad (10.166)$$

where  $S_n(\mu) = \frac{\mu}{n}I_m - \widehat{\Pi}_{1st}$ . Using the results in (a), we can show that

$$\begin{aligned} & \beta'_{o\perp} \left\{ S_n(\mu) - S_n(\mu)\beta_o [\beta'_o S_n(\mu)\beta_o]^{-1} \beta'_o S_n(\mu) \right\} \beta_{o\perp} \\ &= \frac{\mu}{n}I_{m-r_o} - \beta'_{o\perp} \left[ I_m - \alpha_o (\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \beta'_o + o_p(1) \right] \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) \beta_{o\perp}. \end{aligned} \quad (10.167)$$

Using the definitions of  $H_1$  and  $H_2$  in the proof of Lemma 10.2.(c), we can deduce that

$$nH_1Q \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) Q^{-1}H'_2 = H_1 \left( QU\widehat{M}_0Y'_-Q'D_n \right) \left( D_nQY_-\widehat{M}_0Y'_-Q'D_n \right)^{-1} H'_2 \quad (10.168)$$

where under Lemma 10.5,

$$\begin{aligned} D_nQY_-\widehat{M}_0Y'_-Q'D_n &= D_nZ_-Z'_-D_n - n^{-1}D_nZ_-\Delta X' \widehat{S}_{x_0x_0}^{-1} \Delta X Z'_-D_n \\ &\rightarrow_d \begin{pmatrix} \Sigma_{z_1z_1} - \Sigma_{z_1\Delta x} \Sigma_{\Delta x\Delta x}^{-1} \Sigma_{\Delta xz_1} & 0 \\ 0 & \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \end{pmatrix} \end{aligned} \quad (10.169)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} U\widehat{M}_0Y'_-Q'D_n &= UZ'_-D_n - n^{-1}U\Delta X' \widehat{S}_{x_0x_0}^{-1} \Delta X Z'_-D_n \\ &\rightarrow_d \left( B_{u,z_1} - B_{u,\Delta x} \Sigma_{\Delta x\Delta x}^{-1} \Sigma_{\Delta xz_1} \quad \left( \int B_{w_2} dB'_u \right)' \right). \end{aligned} \quad (10.170)$$

Using the results in (10.169) and (10.170), we obtain

$$nH_1Q \left( \widehat{\Pi}_{1st} - \Pi_o \right) Q^{-1}H'_2 \rightarrow_d (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \left( \int B_{w_2} dB'_{w_2} \right)' \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp}). \quad (10.171)$$

Then, from (10.167)-(10.171), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \left| n\beta'_{o\perp} \left\{ S_n(\mu) - S_n(\mu)\beta_o [\beta'_o S_n(\mu)\beta_o]^{-1} \beta'_o S_n(\mu) \right\} \beta_{o\perp} \right| \\ &\rightarrow_d \left| \mu I_{m-r_o} - \left( \int B_{w_2} dB'_{w_2} \right)' \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} \right|, \end{aligned} \quad (10.172)$$

uniformly over  $K$ . The result in (c) follows from (10.172) and by continuous mapping theorem. ■

**Proof of Lemma 5.1.** Let  $\Theta = (\Pi, B)$  and

$$\begin{aligned} V_n(\Theta) &= \sum_{t=1}^n \left\| \Delta Y_t - \Pi Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p B_j \Delta Y_{t-j} \right\|^2 \\ &\quad + n \sum_{j=1}^p \lambda_{b,j,n} \|B_j\| + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi)\|. \end{aligned}$$

Set  $\hat{\Theta}_n = (\hat{\Pi}_n, \hat{B}_n)$  and define an infeasible estimator  $\tilde{\Theta}_n = (\Pi_{n,f}, B_o)$ , where  $\Pi_{n,f}$  is defined in (10.16). Then by definition

$$(\tilde{\Theta}_n - \Theta_o)Q_B^{-1}D_{n,B}^{-1} = (\Pi_{n,f} - \Pi_o, 0)Q_B^{-1}D_{n,B}^{-1} = O_p(1) \quad (10.173)$$

where the last equality is by (10.19).

By definition  $V_n(\hat{\Theta}_n) \leq V_n(\tilde{\Theta}_n)$ , so that

$$\begin{aligned} &\left\{ \text{vec} \left[ (\tilde{\Theta}_n - \hat{\Theta}_n)Q_B^{-1}D_{n,B}^{-1} \right] \right\}' W_n \left\{ \text{vec} \left[ (\tilde{\Theta}_n - \hat{\Theta}_n)Q_B^{-1}D_{n,B}^{-1} \right] \right\} \\ &+ 2 \left\{ \text{vec} \left[ (\tilde{\Theta}_n - \hat{\Theta}_n)Q_B^{-1}D_{n,B}^{-1} \right] \right\}' \left\{ \text{vec} \left( D_{n,B} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} u_t' \right) \right\} \\ &+ 2 \left\{ \text{vec} \left[ (\tilde{\Theta}_n - \hat{\Theta}_n)Q_B^{-1}D_{n,B}^{-1} \right] \right\}' W_n \left\{ \text{vec} \left[ (\Theta_o - \tilde{\Theta}_n)Q_B^{-1}D_{n,B}^{-1} \right] \right\} \\ &\leq (d_{1,n} + d_{2,n}) \end{aligned} \quad (10.174)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} W_n &= D_{n,B} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Z_{t-1}' D_{n,B} \otimes I_{m(p+1)}, \\ d_{1,n} &= n \sum_{j \in \mathcal{S}_B} \lambda_{b,j,n} \left[ \|B_{o,j}\| - \|\hat{B}_{n,j}\| \right], \\ d_{2,n} &= n \sum_{k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_{n,f})\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\hat{\Pi}_n)\| \right]. \end{aligned}$$

Applying the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality to (10.174), we deduce that

$$\mu_n \left\| (\hat{\Theta}_n - \tilde{\Theta}_n)Q_B^{-1}D_{n,B}^{-1} \right\|^2 - \left\| (\hat{\Theta}_n - \tilde{\Theta}_n)Q_B^{-1}D_{n,B}^{-1} \right\| (c_{1,n} + c_{2,n}) \leq (d_{1,n} + d_{2,n}), \quad (10.175)$$

where  $\mu_n$  denotes the smallest eigenvalue of  $W_n$ , which is bounded away from zero w.p.a.1,

$$c_{1,n} = \left\| D_{n,B} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} u'_t \right\| \text{ and } c_{2,n} = \|W_n\| \left\| (\Theta_o - \tilde{\Theta}_n) Q_B^{-1} D_{n,B}^{-1} \right\|. \quad (10.176)$$

By the definition of the penalty function, Lemma 10.6 and the Slutsky Theorem, we find that

$$d_{1,n} \leq n \sum_{j \in \mathcal{S}_B} \lambda_{b,j,n} \|B_{o,j}\| = O_p(n\delta_{b,n}) \text{ and} \quad (10.177)$$

$$d_{2,n} \leq n \sum_{k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_{n,f})\| = O_p(n\delta_{r,n}). \quad (10.178)$$

Using Lemma 10.5 and (10.173), we obtain

$$c_{1,n} = O_p(1) \text{ and } c_{2,n} = O_p(1). \quad (10.179)$$

From the inequality in (10.175), the results in (10.177), (10.178) and (10.179), we deduce that

$$\left\| (\hat{\Theta}_n - \tilde{\Theta}_n) Q_B^{-1} D_{n,B}^{-1} \right\| = O_P(1 + n^{1/2} \delta_{b,n}^{1/2} + n^{1/2} \delta_{r,n}^{1/2}).$$

which implies  $\|\hat{\Theta}_n - \tilde{\Theta}_n\| = O_P(n^{-1/2} + \delta_{b,n}^{1/2} + \delta_{r,n}^{1/2}) = o_p(1)$ . This shows the consistency of  $\hat{\Theta}_n$ .

We next derive the convergence rate of the LS shrinkage estimator  $\hat{\Theta}_n$ . Using the similar arguments in the proof of Theorem 3.2, we get

$$|d_{1,n}| \leq cn^{\frac{1}{2}} \delta_{b,n} \left\| (\hat{\Theta}_n - \Theta_o) Q_B^{-1} D_{n,B}^{-1} \right\| \quad (10.180)$$

and

$$|d_{2,n}| \leq cn^{\frac{1}{2}} \delta_{r,n} \left\| (\hat{\Theta}_n - \Theta_o) Q_B^{-1} D_{n,B}^{-1} \right\|. \quad (10.181)$$

Combining the results in (10.180)-(10.181), we get

$$|d_{1,n} + d_{2,n}| \leq cn^{\frac{1}{2}} \delta_n \left\| (\hat{\Theta}_n - \Theta_o) Q_B^{-1} D_{n,B}^{-1} \right\| \quad (10.182)$$

where  $\delta_n = \delta_{b,n} + \delta_{r,n}$ . From the inequality in (10.175) and the result in (10.182),

$$\mu_n \left\| (\hat{\Theta}_n - \tilde{\Theta}_n) Q_B^{-1} D_{n,B}^{-1} \right\|^2 - \left\| (\hat{\Theta}_n - \tilde{\Theta}_n) Q_B^{-1} D_{n,B}^{-1} \right\| (c_{1,n} + c_{2,n} + n^{\frac{1}{2}} \delta_n) \leq 0, \quad (10.183)$$

which together with (10.179) implies that  $\left\|(\widehat{\Theta}_n - \widetilde{\Theta}_n)Q_B^{-1}D_{n,B}^{-1}\right\| = O_p(1 + n^{\frac{1}{2}}\delta_n)$ . This finishes the proof. ■

**Proof of Theorem 5.1.** The first result can be proved using similar arguments in the proof of Theorem 3.3. Specifically, we rewrite the LS shrinkage estimation problem as

$$\begin{aligned} (\widehat{T}_n, \widehat{B}_n) &= \arg \min_{T, B_1, \dots, B_p \in R^{m \times m}} \sum_{t=1}^n \left\| \Delta Y_t - P_n T Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p B_j \Delta Y_{t-j} \right\|^2 \\ &\quad + n \sum_{k=1}^m \lambda_{r,k,n} \|T(k)\| + n \sum_{j=1}^p \lambda_{b,j,n} \|B_j\|. \end{aligned} \quad (10.184)$$

By definition,  $\widehat{\Pi}_n = P_n \widehat{T}_n$  and  $\widehat{T}_n = Q_n \widehat{\Pi}_n$  for all  $n$ . Results in (5.8) follows if we can show that the last  $m - r_o$  rows of  $\widehat{T}_n$  are estimated as zeros w.p.a.1.

The KKT optimality conditions for  $\widehat{T}_n$  are

$$\begin{cases} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j})' P_n(k) Y_{t-1}' = \frac{n \lambda_{r,k,n} \widehat{T}_n(k)}{2 \|\widehat{T}_n(k)\|} & \text{if } \widehat{T}_n(k) \neq 0 \\ \left\| n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j})' P_n(k) Y_{t-1}' \right\| < \frac{\lambda_{r,k,n}}{2} & \text{if } \widehat{T}_n(k) = 0 \end{cases},$$

for  $k = 1, \dots, m$ . Conditional on the event  $\{Q_{\alpha,n}(k_o) \widehat{\Pi}_n \neq 0\}$  for some  $k_o$  satisfying  $r_o < k_o \leq m$ , we obtain the following equation from the KKT optimality conditions

$$\left\| n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j})' P_n(k_o) Y_{t-1}' \right\| = \frac{\lambda_{r,k,n}}{2}. \quad (10.185)$$

The sample average in the left hand side of (10.46) can be rewritten as

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j})' P_n(k_o) Y_{t-1}' \\ &= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t - (\widehat{\Theta}_n - \Theta_o) Q_B^{-1} Z_{t-1}]' P_n(k_o) Y_{t-1}' \\ &= \frac{P_n'(k_o) \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y_{t-1}'}{n} - \frac{P_n'(k_o) (\widehat{\Theta}_n - \Theta_o) Q_B^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} Y_{t-1}'}{n} = O_p(1) \end{aligned} \quad (10.186)$$

where the last equality is by Lemma 10.5 and Lemma 5.1. However, under the assumptions on the tuning parameters  $\lambda_{r,k_o,n} \rightarrow_p \infty$ , which together with the results in (10.185) and (10.186) implies that

$$\Pr \left( Q_{\alpha,n}(k_o) \widehat{\Pi}_n = 0 \right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty.$$

As the above result holds for any  $k_o$  such that  $r_o < k_o \leq m$ , this finishes the proof of (5.8).

We next show the second result. The LS shrinkage estimators of the transient dynamic matrices satisfy the following KKT optimality conditions:

$$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j}) \Delta Y'_{t-j} = \frac{n \lambda_{b,j,n} \widehat{B}_{n,j}}{2 \|\widehat{B}_{n,j}\|} \quad \text{if } \widehat{B}_{n,j} \neq 0 \\ \left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j}) \Delta Y'_{t-j} \right\| < \frac{\lambda_{b,j,n} \widehat{B}_{n,j}}{2 \|\widehat{B}_{n,j}\|} \quad \text{if } \widehat{B}_{n,j} = 0 \end{array} \right. ,$$

for any  $j = 1, \dots, p$ . On the event  $\{\widehat{B}_{n,j} \neq \mathbf{0}_{m \times m}\}$  for some  $j \in \mathcal{S}_B^c$ , we get the following equation from the optimality conditions,

$$\left\| n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j}) \Delta Y'_{t-j} \right\| = \frac{n^{\frac{1}{2}} \lambda_{b,j,n}}{2}. \quad (10.187)$$

The sample average in the left hand side of (10.187) can be rewritten as

$$\begin{aligned} & n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n (\Delta Y_t - \widehat{\Pi}_n Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{B}_{n,j} \Delta Y_{t-j}) \Delta Y'_{t-j} \\ &= n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n [u_t - (\widehat{\Theta}_n - \Theta_o) Q_B^{-1} Z_{t-1}] \Delta Y'_{t-j} \\ &= n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t \Delta Y'_{t-j} - n^{-\frac{1}{2}} (\widehat{\Theta}_n - \Theta_o) Q_B^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{t-1} \Delta Y'_{t-j} = O_p(1) \end{aligned} \quad (10.188)$$

where the last equality is by Lemma 10.5 and Lemma 5.1. However, by the assumptions on the tuning parameters  $n^{\frac{1}{2}} \lambda_{b,j,n} \rightarrow \infty$ , which together with (10.187) and (10.188) implies that

$$\Pr \left( \widehat{B}_{n,j} = \mathbf{0}_{m \times m} \right) \rightarrow 1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty$$

for any  $j \in \mathcal{S}_B^c$ , which finishes the proof. ■

**Proof of Theorem 5.2.** Follow the similar arguments in the proof of Theorem 3.5, we normalize  $\beta_o$  as  $\beta_o = [I_{r_o}, O_{r_o}]'$  to ensure identification, where  $O_{r_o}$  is some  $r_o \times (m - r_o)$  matrix such that  $\Pi_o = \alpha_o \beta_o' = [\alpha_o, \alpha_o O_{r_o}]$ . From Lemma 5.1, we have

$$\left( n^{\frac{1}{2}}(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o)\alpha_o(\beta_o'\alpha_o)^{-1} \quad n^{\frac{1}{2}}(\widehat{B}_n - B_o) \quad n(\widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o)\beta_{o,\perp}(\alpha'_{o,\perp}\beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \right) = O_p(1),$$

which implies that

$$n \left( \widehat{O}_n - O_o \right) = O_p(1), \quad (10.189)$$

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}}(\widehat{B}_n - B_o) = O_p(1), \quad (10.190)$$

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}}(\widehat{\alpha}_n - \alpha_o) = O_p(1), \quad (10.191)$$

where (10.189) and (10.191) hold with similar arguments in showing (10.57) and (10.58) in the proof of Theorem 3.5.

From the results of Theorem 5.1, we deduce that  $\widehat{\alpha}_n$ ,  $\widehat{\beta}_n$  and  $\widehat{B}_{S_B}$  minimize the following criterion function w.p.a.1,

$$\begin{aligned} V_n(\Theta_S) &= \sum_{t=1}^n \left\| \Delta Y_t - \alpha \beta' Y_{t-1} - \sum_{j \in S_B} B_j \Delta Y_{t-j} \right\|^2 \\ &\quad + n \sum_{k \in S_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n} \|\Phi_{n,k}(\alpha \beta')\| + n \sum_{j \in S_B} \lambda_{b,j,n} \|B_j\|. \end{aligned}$$

Define  $U_{1,n}^* = \sqrt{n}(\widehat{\alpha}_n - \alpha_o)$ ,  $U_{2,n} = [\mathbf{0}_{r_o}, U_{2,n}^*]'$ , where  $U_{2,n}^* = n(\widehat{O}_n - O_o)$  and  $U_{3,n}^* = \sqrt{n}(\widehat{B}_{S_B} - B_{o,S_B})$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} &\left[ \left( \widehat{\Pi}_n - \Pi_o \right), \left( \widehat{B}_{S_B} - B_{o,S_B} \right) \right] Q_S^{-1} D_{n,S}^{-1} \\ &= \left[ n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \widehat{\alpha}_n U_{2,n} \alpha_o (\beta_o' \alpha_o)^{-1} + U_{1,n}^*, U_{3,n}^*, \widehat{\alpha}_n U_{2,n} \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \right]. \end{aligned}$$

Denote

$$\Pi_n(U) = \left[ n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \widehat{\alpha}_n U_2 \alpha_o (\beta_o' \alpha_o)^{-1} + U_1, U_3, \widehat{\alpha}_n U_2 \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \right],$$

then by definition,  $U_n^* = (U_{1,n}^*, U_{2,n}^*, U_{3,n}^*)$  minimizes the following criterion function

$$\begin{aligned} V_n(U) &= \sum_{t=1}^n \left( \left\| u_t - \Pi_n(U) D_{n,S}^{-1} Z_{S,t-1} \right\|^2 - \|u_t\|^2 \right) \\ &\quad + n \sum_{k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \left\| \Phi_{n,k} \left[ \Pi_n(U) D_{n,S}^{-1} Q_S L_1 + \Pi_o \right] \right\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_o)\| \right] \\ &\quad + n \sum_{j \in \mathcal{S}_B} \lambda_{b,j,n} \left[ \left\| \Pi_n(U) D_{n,S}^{-1} Q_S L_{j+1} + B_{o,j} \right\| - \|B_{o,j}\| \right]. \end{aligned}$$

where  $L_j = \text{diag}(A_{j,1}, \dots, A_{j,d_{\mathcal{S}_B}+1})$  with  $A_{j,j} = I_m$  and  $A_{i,j} = 0$  for  $i \neq j$  and  $j = 1, \dots, d_{\mathcal{S}_B}+1$ .

For any compact set  $K \in R^{m \times r_o} \times R^{r_o \times (m-r_o)} \times R^{m \times m d_{\mathcal{S}_B}}$  and any  $U \in K$ , there is

$$\Pi_n(U) D_{n,S}^{-1} Q_S = O_p(n^{-\frac{1}{2}}).$$

Hence using similar arguments in the proof of Theorem 3.5, we can deduce that

$$n \sum_{k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi} \lambda_{r,k,n} \left[ \left\| \Phi_{n,k} \left[ \Pi_n(U) D_{n,S}^{-1} Q_S L_1 + \Pi_o \right] \right\| - \|\Phi_{n,k}(\Pi_o)\| \right] = o_p(1) \quad (10.192)$$

and

$$n \sum_{j \in \mathcal{S}_B} \lambda_{b,j,n} \left[ \left\| \Pi_n(U) D_{n,S}^{-1} Q_S L_{j+1} + B_{o,j} \right\| - \|B_{o,j}\| \right] = o_p(1) \quad (10.193)$$

uniformly over  $U \in K$ .

Next, note that

$$\Pi_n(U) \rightarrow_p [U_1, U_3, \alpha_o U_2 \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1}] \equiv \Pi_\infty(U) \quad (10.194)$$

uniformly over  $U \in K$ . By Lemma 10.5 and (10.194), we can deduce that

$$\begin{aligned} &\sum_{t=1}^n \left( \left\| u_t - \Pi_n(U) D_{n,S}^{-1} Z_{S,t-1} \right\|^2 - \|u_t\|^2 \right) \\ &\rightarrow_d \text{vec} [\Pi_\infty(U)]' \left[ \begin{pmatrix} \Sigma_{z_3 S z_3 S} & 0 \\ 0 & \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \end{pmatrix} \otimes I_m \right] \text{vec} [\Pi_\infty(U)] \\ &\quad - 2 \text{vec} [\Pi_\infty(U)]' \text{vec} [(V_{3,m}, V_{2,m})] \equiv V(U) \end{aligned} \quad (10.195)$$



uniformly over  $U \in K$ , where  $V_{3,m} = N(0, \Omega_u \otimes \Sigma_{z_3S z_3S})$  and  $V_{2,m} = (\int B_{w_2} dB'_u)'$ .

Using similar arguments in the proof of Theorem 3.5, we can rewrite  $V(U)$  as

$$\begin{aligned} V(U) &= \text{vec}(U_1, U_3)' (\Sigma_{z_3S z_3S} \otimes I_m) \text{vec}(U_1, U_3) \\ &\quad + \text{vec}(U_2)' \left[ \beta_{2,o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} (\beta'_{o,\perp} \alpha_{o,\perp})^{-1} \beta'_{2,o,\perp} \otimes \alpha'_o \alpha_o \right] \text{vec}(U_2) \\ &\quad - 2 \text{vec}(U_1, U_3)' \text{vec}(V_{3,m}) - 2 \text{vec}(U_2)' \text{vec} \left[ \alpha'_o V_{2,m} (\beta'_{o,\perp} \alpha_{o,\perp})^{-1} \beta'_{2,o,\perp} \right]. \end{aligned} \quad (10.196)$$

The expression in (10.196) makes it clear that  $V(U)$  is uniquely minimized at  $(U_1^*, U_2^*, U_3^*)$ , where  $(U_1^*, U_3^*) = V_{3,m} \Sigma_{z_3S z_3S}^{-1}$  and

$$U_2^* = (\alpha'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o V_{2,m} \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp}) \beta_{2,o,\perp}^{-1}. \quad (10.197)$$

From (10.189), (10.190) and (10.191), we see that  $U_n^*$  is asymptotically tight. Invoking the ACMT, we deduce that  $U_n^* \rightarrow_d U^*$ . The results in (5.11) follow by applying the CMT. ■

## 10.5 Proof of Main Results in Section 6

**Proof of Lemma 6.1.** (i) For any  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi$ , by Lemma 10.2.(b),  $\|\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^\omega \rightarrow_p \|\phi_k(\Pi_o)\|^\omega > 0$ , which implies that

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}} \delta_{r,n} = \frac{n^{\frac{1}{2}} \lambda_{r,k,n}^*}{\|\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^\omega} \rightarrow_p 0. \quad (10.198)$$

On the other hand, for any  $k \in \mathcal{S}_\phi^c$ , by Lemma 10.2.(c),  $\|n\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^\omega \rightarrow_d \|\widetilde{\phi}_{o,k}\|^\omega = O_p(1)$ , which implies that

$$\lambda_{r,k,n} = \frac{n^\omega \lambda_{r,k,n}^*}{\|n\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^\omega} \rightarrow_p \infty. \quad (10.199)$$

This finishes the proof of the first claim.

(ii) We only need to show  $n^{\frac{1+\omega}{2}} \lambda_{r,k,n} = o_p(1)$  for any  $k \in \{r_1 + 1, \dots, r_o\}$ , because the other two results can be proved using the same arguments showing (10.198)-(10.199). For any  $k \in \{r_1 + 1, \dots, r_o\}$ , by Lemma 10.4.(d),  $\|n^{\frac{1}{2}} \phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^\omega \rightarrow_d \|\widetilde{\phi}'_k\|^\omega$  which is a

non-degenerated and continuous random variable. As a result, we can deduce that

$$n^{\frac{1}{2}}\lambda_{r,k,n} = \frac{n^{\frac{1+\omega}{2}}\lambda_{r,k,n}^*}{\|n^{\frac{1}{2}}\phi_k(\widehat{\Pi}_{1st})\|^\omega} = o_p(1) \quad (10.200)$$

which finishes the proof of the second claim.

(iii) The proof follows similar arguments to (i) and is therefore omitted. ■

**Proof of Lemma 6.2.** As the order of the tuning parameter ensures oracle properties of the LS shrinkage estimate, using similar arguments in the proof of Theorem 5.2, we rewrite  $F_{\pi,n}(k)$  as

$$F_{\pi,n}(k) = \frac{Q_n(k)\Omega_u^{-1}}{n} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Y'_{t-1} - (\widehat{\Theta}_{S,n} - \Theta_{S,o})Q_S^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{S,t-1} Y'_{t-1} \right] + o_p(1) \quad (10.201)$$

where under Lemma 10.5

$$\frac{\sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1}}{n} = \left[ \mathbf{0}_{m \times r_o}, \int dB_u B'_u \alpha_{o,\perp} \right] + o_p(1), \text{ and} \quad (10.202)$$

$$\frac{D_{n,S} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{S,t-1} Z'_{t-1}}{n} = \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{0}_{(mp_o+r_o) \times r_o} & 0 \\ 0 & \alpha'_{o,\perp} \int B_u B'_u \alpha_{o,\perp} \end{pmatrix} + o_p(1). \quad (10.203)$$

Using the expression in the proof of Theorem 5.2, we obtain

$$(\widehat{\Theta}_{S,n} - \Theta_{S,o})Q_S^{-1}D_{n,S} = \left[ n^{-\frac{1}{2}}\widehat{\alpha}_n U_{2,n} \alpha_o (\beta'_o \alpha_o)^{-1} + U_{1,n}^*, U_{3,n}^*, \widehat{\alpha}_n U_{2,n} \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \right] \quad (10.204)$$

where  $U_{1,n}^* = \sqrt{n}(\widehat{\alpha}_n - \alpha_o)$ ,  $U_{2,n} = [\mathbf{0}_{r_o}, U_{2,n}^*]$ , where  $U_{2,n}^* = n(\widehat{O}_n - O_o)$  and  $U_{3,n}^* = \sqrt{n}(\widehat{B}_{S_B} - B_{o,S_B})$ . From (10.203) and (10.204), we deduce that

$$(\widehat{\Theta}_{S,n} - \Theta_{S,o})Q_S^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{S,t-1} Z'_{t-1} = \left[ \mathbf{0}_{m \times r_o}, \widehat{\alpha}_n U_{2,n} \beta_{o,\perp} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp})^{-1} \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right] \quad (10.205)$$

where from the proof of Theorem 5.2, we know that

$$U_{2,n}^* = (\alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} \int dB_u B'_{w_2} \left( \int B_{w_2} B'_{w_2} \right)^{-1} (\alpha'_{o,\perp} \beta_{o,\perp}) \beta_{2,o,\perp}^{-1} + o_p(1). \quad (10.206)$$

Now, results in (10.202), (10.205) and (10.206) implies that

$$\begin{aligned}
F_{\pi,n}(k) &= \frac{Q_n(k)\widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1}}{n} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{t-1} - (\widehat{\Theta}_{S,n} - \Theta_{S,o}) Q_S^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{S,t-1} Z'_{t-1} \right] Q'^{-1} \\
&= Q_n(k) \Omega_u^{-1} \left[ \mathbf{0}_{m \times r_o}, [I_m - \alpha_o(\alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1}] \int dB_u B'_u \alpha_{o,\perp} \right] Q'^{-1} \\
&= Q_n(k) [\Omega_u^{-1} - \Omega_u^{-1} \alpha_o(\alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1} \alpha_o)^{-1} \alpha'_o \Omega_u^{-1}] \int dB_u B'_u \alpha_{o,\perp} (\beta'_{o,\perp} \alpha_{o,\perp})^{-1} \beta'_{o,\perp}
\end{aligned}$$

which shows the result in (6.6).

We next show the second claim. We can rewrite  $F_{b,n}(j)$  as

$$F_{b,n}(j) = \frac{\widehat{\Omega}_{u,n}^{-1}}{\sqrt{n}} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t \Delta Y'_{t-j} - (\widehat{\Theta}_{S,n} - \Theta_{S,o}) Q_S^{-1} \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{S,t-1} \Delta Y'_{t-j} \right) \right]. \quad (10.207)$$

Using the arguments in the proof of Theorem 5.2,

$$\begin{aligned}
& n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t \Delta Y'_{t-j} - (\widehat{\Theta}_{S,n} - \Theta_{S,o}) Q_S^{-1} \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{S,t-1} \Delta Y'_{t-j} \right) \right] \\
&= n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t \Delta Y'_{t-j} - \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{3S,t-1} \left( \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{3S,t-1} Z'_{3S,t-1} \right)^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^n Z_{3S,t-1} \Delta Y'_{t-j} \right] + o_p(1) \\
&= n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^n u_t \Delta Y'_{t-j} - \sum_{t=1}^n u_t Z'_{3S,t-1} \Sigma_{z_{3S} z_{3S}}^{-1} \Sigma_{z_{3S}} \Delta y_j \right] + o_p(1) \\
&= n^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=1}^n u_t (\Delta Y'_{t-j} - Z'_{3S,t-1} \Sigma_{z_{3S} z_{3S}}^{-1} \Sigma_{z_{3S}} \Delta y_j) + o_p(1) \\
&\rightarrow_d N \left( 0, \Omega_u \otimes \Sigma_{\Delta y_j | z_{3S}} \right). \quad (10.208)
\end{aligned}$$

From the results in (10.207) and (10.208), we deduce that

$$F_{b,n}(j) \rightarrow_d \Omega_u^{-1} N \left( 0, \Omega_u \otimes \Sigma_{\Delta y_j | z_{3S}} \right) \stackrel{d}{=} \Omega_u^{-\frac{1}{2}} B_{m \times m}(1) \Sigma_{\Delta y_j | z_{3S}}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

which finishes the proof. ■

## References

- [1] Athanasopoulos, G., Guillen, O.T.C., Issler, J.V., and Vahid, F., "Model selection, estimation and forecasting in VAR models with short-run and long-run restrictions", *Journal of Econometrics*, vol. 164, no. 1, pp. 116-129, 2011
- [2] M. Caner and K. Knight, "No country for old unit root tests: bridge estimators differentiate between nonstationary versus stationary models and select optimal lag," *unpublished manuscript*, 2009.
- [3] J. Chao and P.C.B. Phillips, "Model selection in partially nonstationary vector autoregressive processes with reduced rank structure," *Journal of Econometrics*, vol. 91, no. 2, pp. 227-271, 1999.
- [4] X. Cheng and P.C.B. Phillips, "Semiparametric cointegrating rank selection," *Econometrics Journal*, vol. 12, pp. S83-S104, 2009.
- [5] X. Cheng and P.C.B. Phillips, "Cointegrating Rank Selection in Models with Time-Varying Variance," *Journal of Econometrics*, vol. 142, no. 1, pp. 201-211, 2012
- [6] J. Fan and R. Li, "Variable selection via nonconcave penalized likelihood and its oracle properties," *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, vol. 96, no. 456, pp. 1348-1360, 2001.
- [7] S. Johansen, "Statistical analysis of cointegration vectors," *Journal of economic dynamics and control*, vol. 12, no. 2-3, pp. 231-254, 1988.
- [8] S. Johansen, *Likelihood-based inference in cointegrated vector autoregressive models*. Oxford University Press, USA, 1995.
- [9] K. Knight and W. Fu, "Asymptotics for lasso-type estimators," *Annals of Statistics*, vol. 28, no. 5, pp. 1356-1378, 2000.
- [10] H. Leeb and B. M. Pötscher, "Model selection and inference: facts and fiction," *Econometric Theory*, vol. 21, no. 01, pp. 21-59, 2005.
- [11] H. Leeb and B. M. Pötscher, "Sparse estimators and the oracle property, or the return of the Hodges estimator", *Journal of Econometrics*, vol. 142, no. 1, pp. 201-211, 2008.

- [12] P.C.B. Phillips, "Optimal inference in cointegrated systems," *Econometrica*, vol. 59, no. 2, pp. 283.306, 1991a.
- [13] P.C.B. Phillips, "Spectral regression for cointegrated time series." In W. Barnett, J. Powell and G. Tauchen (eds.), *Nonparametric and Semiparametric Methods in Economics and Statistics, 413-435*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1991b.
- [14] P.C.B. Phillips, "Fully modified least squares and vector autoregression," *Econometrica*, vol. 63, no. 5, pp. 1023.1078, 1995.
- [15] P.C.B. Phillips, "Econometric model determination," *Econometrica*, vol. 64, no. 4, pp. 763.812, 1996.
- [16] P.C.B. Phillips and V. Solo, "Asymptotics for linear processes," *Annals of Statistics*, vol. 20, no. 2, pp. 971.1001, 1992.
- [17] H. Zou, "The adaptive lasso and its oracle properties," *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, vol. 101, no. 476, pp. 1418.1429, 2006.

## 11 Tables and Figures

Table 11.1 Cointegration Rank Selection with Adaptive Lasso Penalty

		Model 1					
		$r_o=0, \lambda_o=(0 \ 0)$		$r_o=1, \lambda_o=(0 \ -0.5)$		$r_o=2, \lambda_o=(-0.6 \ -0.5)$	
		$n = 100$	$n = 400$	$n = 100$	$n = 400$	$n = 100$	$n = 400$
$\hat{r}_n = 0$		<b>0.9588</b>	<b>0.9984</b>	0.0000	0.0002	0.0000	0.0000
$\hat{r}_n = 1$		0.0412	0.0016	<b>0.9954</b>	<b>0.9996</b>	0.0000	0.0000
$\hat{r}_n = 2$		0.0000	0.0000	0.0046	0.0002	<b>1.0000</b>	<b>1.0000</b>
		Model 2					
		$r_o=0, \lambda_1=(0 \ 0)$		$r_o=1, \lambda_1=(0 \ -0.25)$		$r_o=2, \lambda_1=(-0.30 \ -0.15)$	
		$n = 100$	$n = 400$	$n = 100$	$n = 400$	$n = 100$	$n = 400$
$\hat{r}_n = 0$		<b>0.9882</b>	<b>0.9992</b>	0.0010	0.0000	0.0006	0.0000
$\hat{r}_n = 1$		0.0118	0.0008	<b>0.9530</b>	<b>0.9962</b>	0.1210	0.0008
$\hat{r}_n = 2$		0.0010	0.0000	0.0460	0.0038	<b>0.8784</b>	<b>0.9992</b>

Table 11.1: Replications=5000,  $\omega=2$ , adaptive tuning parameter  $\lambda_n$  given in equation (6.15).  $\lambda_o$  represents the eigenvalues of the true matrix  $\Pi_o$ , while  $\lambda_1$  represents the eigenvalues of the pseudo true matrix  $\Pi_1$ .

Table 11.2 Rank Selection and Lagged Order Selection with Adaptive Lasso Penalty

Cointegration Rank Selection						
	$r_o=0, \lambda_o=(0 \ 0)$		$r_o=1, \lambda_o=(0 \ -0.5)$		$r_o=2, \lambda_o=(-0.6 \ -0.5)$	
	$n = 100$	$n = 400$	$n = 100$	$n = 400$	$n = 100$	$n = 400$
$\hat{r}_n = 0$	<b>0.9818</b>	<b>1.0000</b>	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$\hat{r}_n = 1$	0.0182	0.0000	<b>0.9980</b>	<b>1.0000</b>	0.0000	0.0008
$\hat{r}_n = 2$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0020	0.0000	<b>1.0000</b>	<b>0.9992</b>
Lagged Difference Selection						
	$r_o=0, \lambda_o=(0 \ 0)$		$r_o=1, \lambda_o=(0 \ -0.5)$		$r_o=2, \lambda_o=(-0.6 \ -0.5)$	
	$n = 100$	$n = 400$	$n = 100$	$n = 400$	$n = 100$	$n = 400$
$\hat{p}_n \in T$	<b>0.9856</b>	<b>0.9976</b>	<b>0.9960</b>	<b>0.9998</b>	<b>0.9634</b>	<b>1.0000</b>
$\hat{p}_n \in C$	0.0058	0.0004	0.0040	0.0002	0.0042	0.0000
$\hat{p}_n \in I$	0.0086	0.0020	0.0000	0.0000	0.0324	0.0000
Model Selection						
	$r_o=0, \lambda_o=(0 \ 0)$		$r_o=1, \lambda_o=(0 \ -0.5)$		$r_o=2, \lambda_o=(-0.6 \ -0.5)$	
	$n = 100$	$n = 400$	$n = 100$	$n = 400$	$n = 100$	$n = 400$
$\hat{m}_n \in T$	<b>0.9692</b>	<b>0.9976</b>	<b>0.9942</b>	<b>0.9998</b>	<b>0.9634</b>	<b>0.9992</b>
$\hat{m}_n \in C$	0.0222	0.0004	0.0058	0.0002	0.0042	0.0000
$\hat{m}_n \in I$	0.0086	0.0020	0.0000	0.0000	0.0324	0.0008

Table 11.2: Replications=5000,  $\omega=2$ , adaptive tuning parameter  $\lambda_n$  given in (6.15) and (6.16).  $\lambda_o$  in each column represents the eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$ . "T" denotes selection of the true lags model, "C" denotes the selection of a consistent lags model (i.e., a model with no incorrect shrinkage), and "I" denotes the selection of an inconsistent lags model (i.e. a model with incorrect shrinkage).

Table 11.3 Finite Sample Properties of the Shrinkage Estimates

Model 1 with $r_o = 0$ , $\lambda_o = (0.0 \ 0.0)$ and $n = 100$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$\Pi_{11}$	-0.0005	0.0073	0.0073	-0.0251	0.0361	0.0440	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$\Pi_{12}$	0.0000	0.0052	0.0052	0.0005	0.0406	0.0406	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$\Pi_{21}$	0.0000	0.0035	0.0035	0.0002	0.0301	0.0301	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$\Pi_{22}$	0.0004	0.0069	0.0069	-0.0244	0.0349	0.0426	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
Model 1 with $r_o = 0$ , $\lambda_o = (0.0 \ 0.0)$ and $n = 400$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$\Pi_{11}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0084	0.0118	0.0145	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$\Pi_{12}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0001	0.0101	0.0101	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$\Pi_{21}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0001	0.0134	0.0134	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$\Pi_{22}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0082	0.0116	0.0142	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000

Table 11.3: Replications=5000,  $\omega=2$ , adaptive tuning parameter  $\lambda_n$  given in equation (6.15).  $\lambda_o$  in each column represents the eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$ . The oracle estimate in this case is simply a 4 by 4 zero matrix.

Table 11.4 Finite Sample Properties of the Shrinkage Estimates

Model 1 with $r_o = 1$ , $\lambda_o = (0.0 -0.5)$ and $n = 100$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$\Pi_{11}$	0.0032	0.0609	0.0610	-0.0067	0.0551	0.0555	-0.0046	0.0548	0.0550
$\Pi_{12}$	-0.0023	0.0308	0.0308	-0.0066	0.0285	0.0293	-0.0023	0.0275	0.0276
$\Pi_{21}$	0.0015	0.0617	0.0617	-0.0035	0.0478	0.0480	-0.0018	0.0476	0.0477
$\Pi_{22}$	-0.0012	0.0308	0.0308	-0.0045	0.0246	0.0250	-0.0009	0.0238	0.0238
Model 1 with $r_o = 1$ , $\lambda_o = (0.0 -0.5)$ and $n = 400$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$\Pi_{11}$	0.0008	0.0343	0.0343	-0.0027	0.0307	0.0308	-0.0020	0.0306	0.0307
$\Pi_{12}$	0.0004	0.0171	0.0171	-0.0013	0.0155	0.0157	-0.0007	0.0153	0.0154
$\Pi_{21}$	-0.0007	0.0312	0.0312	-0.0025	0.0276	0.0277	-0.0010	0.0275	0.0275
$\Pi_{22}$	-0.0004	0.0156	0.0156	-0.0016	0.0140	0.0140	-0.0003	0.0138	0.0138
Model 1 with $r_o = 1$ , $\lambda_o = (0.0 -0.5)$ and $n = 100$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$Q_{11}$	0.0022	0.0833	0.0833	0.0008	0.0728	0.0728	-0.0055	0.0712	0.0714
$Q_{12}$	-0.0003	0.0069	0.0069	-0.0130	0.0243	0.0276	0.0000	0.0033	0.0033
$Q_{21}$	0.0008	0.0778	0.0779	0.0012	0.0658	0.0658	-0.0046	0.0643	0.0644
$Q_{22}$	-0.0003	0.0052	0.0052	-0.0119	0.0220	0.0251	0.0000	0.0004	0.0004
Model 1 with $r_o = 1$ , $\lambda_o = (0.0 -0.5)$ and $n = 400$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$Q_{11}$	0.0004	0.0415	0.0415	-0.0003	0.0405	0.0405	-0.0023	0.0401	0.0401
$Q_{12}$	0.0000	0.0010	0.0010	0.0000	0.0081	0.0092	-0.0019	0.0010	0.0010
$Q_{21}$	0.0000	0.0371	0.0371	-0.0044	0.0368	0.0368	0.0000	0.0364	0.0364
$Q_{22}$	0.0000	0.0001	0.0001	-0.0040	0.0073	0.0083	0.0000	0.0001	0.0001

Table 11.4: Replications=5000,  $\omega=2$ , adaptive tuning parameter  $\lambda_n$  given in equation (6.15).  $\lambda_o$  in each column represents the eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$ . The oracle estimate in this case is the RRR estimate with rank restriction  $r=1$ .



Table 11.5 Finite Sample Properties of the Shrinkage Estimates

Model 1 with $r_o = 2$ , $\lambda_o = (-0.6, -0.5)$ and $n = 100$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$\Pi_{11}$	-0.0228	0.0897	0.0926	-0.0104	0.0934	0.0940	-0.0104	0.0934	0.0940
$\Pi_{12}$	0.0384	0.0914	0.0992	-0.0008	0.0904	0.0904	-0.0008	0.0904	0.0904
$\Pi_{21}$	-0.0247	0.0995	0.1025	0.0016	0.0813	0.0813	0.0016	0.0813	0.0813
$\Pi_{22}$	0.0505	0.1459	0.1544	-0.0099	0.0780	0.0786	-0.0099	0.0780	0.0786
Model 1 with $r_o = 2$ , $\lambda_o = (-0.6, -0.5)$ and $n = 400$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$\Pi_{11}$	-0.0058	0.0524	0.0527	-0.0025	0.0523	0.0523	-0.0025	0.0523	0.0523
$\Pi_{12}$	0.0051	0.0545	0.0547	0.0009	0.0508	0.0509	0.0009	0.0508	0.0509
$\Pi_{21}$	-0.0049	0.0546	0.0548	-0.0019	0.0459	0.0459	-0.0019	0.0459	0.0459
$\Pi_{22}$	0.0075	0.0750	0.0754	-0.0037	0.0438	0.0440	-0.0037	0.0438	0.0440

Table 11.5: Replications=5000,  $\omega=2$ , adaptive tuning parameter  $\lambda_n$  given in equation (6.15).  $\lambda_o$  in each column represents the eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$ . The oracle estimate in this case is simply the OLS estimate.

Table 11.6 Finite Sample Properties of the Shrinkage Estimates

Model 3 with $r_o = 0$ , $\lambda_o = (0.0, 0.0)$ and $n = 400$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$\Pi_{11}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0019	0.0029	0.0035	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$\Pi_{21}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0025	0.0025	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$\Pi_{12}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0033	0.0033	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$\Pi_{22}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0018	0.0029	0.0035	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{1,11}$	-0.0301	0.0493	0.0577	-0.0069	0.0535	0.0540	-0.0044	0.0477	0.0479
$B_{1,21}$	-0.0006	0.0334	0.0334	-0.0007	0.0462	0.0462	-0.0008	0.0409	0.0409
$B_{1,12}$	-0.0006	0.0428	0.0428	-0.0017	0.0630	0.0631	-0.0011	0.0569	0.0569
$B_{1,22}$	-0.0304	0.0502	0.0587	-0.0079	0.0543	0.0549	-0.0048	0.0486	0.0489
$B_{2,11}$	0.0000	0.0013	0.0013	-0.0048	0.0575	0.0577	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{2,21}$	0.0000	0.0001	0.0001	-0.0001	0.0502	0.0502	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{2,12}$	-0.0000	0.0004	0.0004	0.0009	0.0664	0.0664	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{2,22}$	0.0000	0.0009	0.0009	-0.0043	0.0577	0.0579	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{3,11}$	-0.0315	0.0482	0.0576	-0.0068	0.0535	0.0539	-0.0061	0.0474	0.0478
$B_{3,21}$	0.0005	0.0337	0.0337	0.0004	0.0457	0.0458	0.0002	0.0411	0.0411
$B_{3,12}$	0.0009	0.0413	0.0413	0.0004	0.0612	0.0612	0.0011	0.0551	0.0552
$B_{3,22}$	-0.0318	0.0486	0.0581	-0.0073	0.0532	0.0537	-0.0058	0.0478	0.0482

Table 11.6: Replications=5000,  $\omega=2$ , adaptive tuning parameter  $\lambda_n$  given in equations (6.15) and (6.16).  $\lambda_o$  in each column represents the eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$ . The oracle estimate in this case is simply the OLS estimate assuming that  $\Pi_o$  and  $B_{2o}$  are zero matrices.

Table 11.7 Finite Sample Properties of the Shrinkage Estimates

Model 3 with $r_o = 1$ , $\lambda_o = (0.0, -0.5)$ and $n = 400$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$\Pi_{11}$	-0.0012	0.0653	0.0653	-0.0015	0.0653	0.0653	-0.0006	0.0647	0.0647
$\Pi_{21}$	-0.0005	0.0564	0.0564	-0.0011	0.0563	0.0563	-0.0003	0.0558	0.0558
$\Pi_{12}$	-0.0006	0.0326	0.0326	-0.0009	0.0327	0.0327	-0.0003	0.0324	0.0324
$\Pi_{22}$	-0.0002	0.0282	0.0282	-0.0007	0.0282	0.0282	-0.0002	0.0279	0.0279
$B_{1,11}$	-0.1086	0.0536	0.1211	-0.0028	0.0572	0.0572	-0.0022	0.0532	0.0533
$B_{1,21}$	-0.0766	0.0432	0.0880	-0.0024	0.0490	0.0491	-0.0021	0.0461	0.0462
$B_{1,12}$	-0.0351	0.0660	0.0747	-0.0019	0.0769	0.0769	-0.0022	0.0727	0.0728
$B_{1,22}$	-0.0281	0.0643	0.0702	-0.0018	0.0672	0.0672	-0.0019	0.0633	0.0633
$B_{2,11}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0010	0.0438	0.0438	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{2,21}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0012	0.0378	0.0378	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{2,12}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0015	0.0789	0.0789	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{2,22}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0005	0.0674	0.0674	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{3,11}$	-0.1206	0.0336	0.1252	-0.0032	0.0424	0.0425	-0.0023	0.0375	0.0375
$B_{3,21}$	-0.0825	0.0295	0.0876	-0.0029	0.0373	0.0374	-0.0021	0.0327	0.0328
$B_{3,12}$	-0.1010	0.0388	0.1082	-0.0020	0.0701	0.0701	-0.0017	0.0523	0.0523
$B_{3,22}$	-0.0730	0.0460	0.0862	-0.0029	0.0611	0.0611	-0.0020	0.0461	0.0462

Table 11.7: Replications=5000,  $\omega=2$ , adaptive tuning parameter  $\lambda_n$  given in equations (6.15) and (6.16).  $\lambda_o$  in each column represents the eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$ . The oracle estimate in this case refers to the RRR estimate with  $r=1$  and the restriction that  $B_{2o} = 0$ .

Table 11.8 Finite Sample Properties of the Shrinkage Estimates

Model 3 with $r_o = 2$ , $\lambda_o = (-0.6, -0.5)$ and $n = 400$									
	Lasso Estimates			OLS			Oracle Estimates		
	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE	Bias	Std	RMSE
$\Pi_{11}$	0.0489	0.0521	0.0715	-0.0024	0.0637	0.0637	-0.0034	0.0514	0.0515
$\Pi_{21}$	0.0140	0.0488	0.0508	0.0009	0.0552	0.0552	0.0001	0.0441	0.0441
$\Pi_{12}$	-0.0214	0.0432	0.0482	0.0010	0.0486	0.0486	0.0013	0.0407	0.0407
$\Pi_{22}$	0.0124	0.0531	0.0545	-0.0009	0.0416	0.0416	-0.0008	0.0349	0.0350
$B_{1,11}$	-0.0852	0.0528	0.1003	-0.0019	0.0644	0.0644	-0.0004	0.0579	0.0579
$B_{1,21}$	-0.0089	0.0436	0.0445	-0.0020	0.0559	0.0560	-0.0013	0.0504	0.0505
$B_{1,12}$	0.0093	0.0426	0.0437	-0.0020	0.0580	0.0580	-0.0023	0.0540	0.0540
$B_{1,22}$	-0.0480	0.0490	0.0686	-0.0025	0.0500	0.0501	-0.0021	0.0469	0.0469
$B_{2,11}$	-0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0008	0.0577	0.0577	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{2,21}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0011	0.0501	0.0501	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{2,12}$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0002	0.0573	0.0573	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{2,22}$	-0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	-0.0001	0.0498	0.0498	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$B_{3,11}$	-0.0728	0.0484	0.0875	-0.0051	0.0545	0.0547	-0.0038	0.0518	0.0519
$B_{3,21}$	-0.0011	0.0367	0.0367	-0.0008	0.0478	0.0478	-0.0004	0.0450	0.0450
$B_{3,12}$	-0.0014	0.0439	0.0439	0.0009	0.0559	0.0559	0.0008	0.0555	0.0555
$B_{3,22}$	-0.0565	0.0524	0.0770	-0.0033	0.0479	0.0480	-0.0029	0.0475	0.0476

Table 11.8: Replications=5000,  $\omega=2$ , adaptive tuning parameter  $\lambda_n$  given in equation (6.15) and (6.16).  $\lambda_o$  in each column represents the eigenvalues of  $\Pi_o$ . The oracle estimate in this case is simply the OLS estimate with the restriction that  $B_{2o} = 0$ .